

0. INTRODUCTION

0.1. Romania and the Romanians

0.2. The Romanian language

1. ALPHABET AND PHONETICS

1.1. The Romanian alphabet

1.2. Potential difficulties related to pronunciation and reading

1.2.1. Pronunciation

1.2.1.1. Vowels [ə] and [y]

1.2.1.2. Consonants [r], [t] and [d]

1.2.2. Reading

1.2.2.1. Unique letters

1.2.2.2. The letter *i* in final position

1.2.2.3. The letter *e* in the initial position

1.2.2.4. The *ce, ci, ge, gi, che, chi, ghe, ghi* groups

1.2.2.5. Diphthongs and triphthongs

1.2.2.6. Vowels in hiatus

1.2.2.7. Stress

1.2.2.8. Liaison

2. MORPHOPHONEMICS

2.1. Inflection

2.1.1. Declension of nominals

2.1.2. Conjugation of verbs

2.1.3. Invariable parts of speech

2.2. Common morphophonemic alternations

2.2.1. Vowel mutations

2.2.1.1. the *o/oa* mutation

2.2.1.2. the *e/ea* mutation

2.2.1.3. the *ă/e* mutation

2.2.1.4. the *a/e* mutation

2.2.1.5. the *a/ă* mutation

2.2.1.6. the *ea/e* mutation

2.2.1.7. the *oa/o* mutation

2.2.1.8. the *ie/ia* mutation

2.2.1.9. the *â/i* mutation

2.2.1.10. the *a/ă* mutation

2.2.1.11. the *u/o* mutation

2.2.2. Consonant mutations

2.2.2.1. the *c/ce or ci* mutation

2.2.2.2. the *g/ge or gi* mutation

2.2.2.3. the *s/ș + i* mutation

2.2.2.4. the *st/șt + i* mutation

2.2.2.5. the *str/ștr + i* mutation

2.2.2.6. the *sc/șt + i or e* mutation

2.2.2.7. the *șc/șt + e or i* mutation

2.2.2.8. the *t/ț + i or e* mutation

2.2.2.9. the *d/z + i/â or ă* mutation

2.2.2.10. the *z/j + i* mutation

2.2.2.11. the *l/Ø + i* mutation

2.2.2.12. the *n/Ø + i* mutation

3. NOMINALS

3.1. Noun

3.1.1. Gender of nouns in the singular

3.1.1.1. Assigning gender

3.1.1.1.1. Noun ending

3.1.1.1.2. Lexical meaning

3.1.1.1.3. The 'one-two' test

3.1.2. Number

3.1.2.1. Forming the plural

3.1.2.1.1. Masculine: *un – doi*

3.1.2.1.2. Feminine: *o – două*

3.1.2.1.3. Neuter: *un - două*

3.1.2.2. Plural endings

3.1.2.2.1. The ending *-i*

3.1.2.2.2. The ending *-le / -ele*

3.1.2.2.3. The endings *-e* and *-uri*

3.1.3. Case

3.1.3.1. Case forms

3.1.3.1.1. Declension with the indefinite article

3.1.3.1.2. Declension with the definite article

3.1.3.2. Accusative (direct object) with and without the preposition *pe*

3.1.3.2.1. The direct object with *pe*

3.1.3.2.2. The direct object without *pe*

3.1.3.3. The accusative with other prepositions

3.1.3.4. Genitive and dative cases

3.1.3.4.1. Differentiating the genitive and dative

3.1.3.4.1.1. The genitive

3.1.3.4.1.2. The dative

3.1.3.4.2. Proper names of persons in the genitive-dative

3.1.3.5. Vocative

3.1.3.5.1. Forming the vocative

3.1.3.5.2. Usage of the vocative

3.1.3.5.2.1. Adjective + noun in the vocative

3.1.3.5.2.2. Adjective + possessive + noun in the vocative

3.2. Article

3.2.1. The definite and the indefinite article

3.2.1.1. The indefinite and the definite article in the singular

3.2.1.1.1. Indefinite article

3.2.1.1.2. Definite article

3.2.1.2. The indefinite and the definite article in the plural

3.2.1.2.1. Indefinite article

3.2.1.2.2. Definite article

3.2.1.3. Article usage and omission

3.2.2. The demonstrative or adjectival article

3.2.3. The possessive or genival article

3.3. Adjective

3.3.1. Adjectival agreement

3.3.1.1. Forming the feminine and the plural of the adjectives

3.3.1.2. Four-form adjectives

3.3.1.3. Three-form adjectives

3.3.1.4. Two-form adjectives

3.3.1.5. One-form adjectives

3.3.2. The usage of the adjectives in pre-position

3.3.3. Adjectival declension

3.3.4. Degrees of comparison of the adjective

3.3.4.1. The comparative degree

3.3.4.1.1. The comparative of superiority

3.3.4.1.2. The comparative of equality

3.3.4.1.3. The comparative of inferiority

3.3.4.2. The superlative degree

3.3.4.2.1. The superlative relative of superiority

3.3.4.2.2. The superlative relative of inferiority

3.3.4.2.3. The superlative absolute

3.3.4.3. Adjectives that do not form degrees of comparison

3.4. Pronoun

3.4.1. Personal pronouns

3.4.1.1. The nominative case of the personal pronouns

3.4.1.2. The accusative case of the personal pronouns

3.4.1.2.1. Full and clitic forms of the accusative

3.4.1.2.2. The personal pronoun used as a direct object

3.4.1.3. The dative case of the personal pronouns

3.4.1.3.1. Full and clitic forms of the dative

3.4.1.3.2. The personal pronoun used as an indirect object

3.4.1.4. Basic patterns of combining personal pronouns in the accusative / dative with verbs

3.4.1.4.1. With the verb in the present indicative

3.4.1.4.2. With the verb in the compound perfect

3.4.1.4.3. With the verb in the future 1 indicative

3.4.1.4.4. With the verb in the present subjunctive

3.4.1.5. Differentiating the accusative and the dative unstressed personal pronouns

3.4.1.6. Verbal constructions with personal pronouns in the accusative and dative

3.4.1.7. Combinations of double personal pronouns (dative and accusative) with verbs

3.4.1.7.1. With the present, compound perfect and future 1 indicative

3.4.1.7.2. With the present subjunctive

3.4.2. Pronouns of politeness

3.4.2.1. The nominative case of the pronouns of politeness

3.4.2.2. Declension of the pronouns of politeness

3.4.3. Reflexive pronouns

3.4.3.1. Clitic forms of the reflexive pronouns

3.4.3.2. The long form of the reflexive pronouns

3.4.4. Pronouns of reinforcement

3.4.5. Possessive pronouns and pronominal adjectives

3.4.5.1. The possessive pronominal adjectives in the nominative-accusative case

3.4.5.2. The possessive pronouns in the nominative-accusative case

3.4.5.3. The declension of the possessive pronominal adjectives

3.4.5.4. The possessive value of the unstressed personal and reflexive pronouns in the dative

3.4.6. Demonstrative pronouns and pronominal adjectives

3.4.6.1. The demonstrative pronouns of proximity and remoteness in the nominative case

3.4.6.2. The demonstrative pronouns of remoteness in the nominative case

3.4.6.3. The demonstrative pronominal adjectives of proximity and remoteness

3.4.6.4. The declension of the demonstrative pronouns / pronominal adjectives of proximity and remoteness

3.4.6.5. The demonstrative pronouns and pronominal adjectives of differentiation and identification

3.4.6.5.1. The demonstratives of differentiation

3.4.6.5.2. The demonstratives of identification

3.4.7. Interrogative / relative pronouns and pronominal adjectives

3.4.7.1 Relative pronouns vs. interrogative pronouns

3.4.7.2. The interrogative pronouns *cine* and *ce* in the nominative

3.4.7.3. The interrogative pronoun / pronominal adjective *care* in the nominative

3.4.7.4. The declension of the interrogative pronouns / pronominal adjectives *cine*, *ce* and *care*

3.4.7.4.1. The interrogative pronoun *cine*

3.4.7.4.2. The interrogative pronoun / pronominal adjective *ce*

3.4.7.4.3. The interrogative pronoun / pronominal adjective *care*

3.4.7.5. The relative pronoun / adjective *care*

3.4.7.6. The relative pronouns *cel ce / cel care*

3.4.7.7. The relative pronoun *ceea ce*

3.4.8. Indefinite and negative pronouns

3.4.8.1. The indefinite pronouns *ceva*, *altceva* and *orice*

3.4.8.2. The indefinite pronouns *cineva*, *altcineva* and *oricine*

3.4.8.3. The negative pronouns *nimeni* and *nimic*

3.4.8.4. The indefinite pronouns / pronominal adjectives *unul / un* and *altul / alt* in the nominative case

3.4.8.5. Indefinite and negative pronouns / pronominal adjectives based on *unul / un* in the nominative

3.4.8.5.1. The indefinite pronoun / pronominal adjective *vreunul / vreun*

3.4.8.5.2. The negative pronoun / pronominal adjective *nici unul / nici un*

3.4.8.6. The declension of the indefinite pronouns / pronominal adjectives *unul*, *vreunul* and of the negative pronoun / pronominal adjective *nici unul*

3.4.8.7. The indefinite pronoun / pronominal adjective *altul / alt*

3.4.8.8. The indefinite pronouns / pronominal adjectives *fiecare* and *oricare*

3.4.9. Reduplication of pronominal complements

3.4.9.1. The double expression of the direct and indirect object

3.4.9.1.1. The anticipation of the direct object

3.4.9.1.2. The reiteration of the direct object

3.4.9.1.3. The anticipation of the indirect object

3.4.9.1.4. The reiteration of the indirect object

3.5. Quantitative expressions and numerals

3.5.1. Quantitative pronouns and adjectives

3.5.1.1. The interrogative / relative pronoun / pronominal adjective *cât* in the nominative case

3.5.1.2. The indefinite pronoun / pronominal adjective *atât* in the nominative case

3.5.1.3. The indefinite pronouns / pronominal adjectives *oricât* and *câtva* in the nominative case

3.5.1.4. The indefinite pronoun / pronominal adjective *tot* in the nominative case

3.5.1.5. The declension of the quantitative pronouns / pronominal adjectives *cât*, *atât*, *oricât*, *câtva* and *tot*

3.5.1.6. Adjectives of indefinite quantity

3.5.2. Cardinal numerals

3.5.2.1. The cardinal numerals from 0 to 10

3.5.2.2. The cardinal numerals from 11 to 19

3.5.2.3. The cardinal numerals from 20 to 99

3.5.2.4. The cardinal numerals 21, 22, ...; 31, 32, ...; 41, 42, ...; etc.

- 3.5.2.5. The cardinal numerals 100 and 1.000
- 3.5.2.6. The cardinal numerals 1.000.000 and 1.000.000.000
- 3.5.2.7. Compound cardinal numerals over 100
- 3.5.2.8. The genitive and the dative of the cardinal numerals
- 3.5.3. Other types of numerals
 - 3.5.3.1. The distributive numeral
 - 3.5.3.2. The collective numeral
 - 3.5.3.3. The adverbial numeral
 - 3.5.3.4. The multiplicative numeral
 - 3.5.3.5. The fractional numeral
- 3.5.4. The numerical approximation
- 3.5.5. Ordinal numerals
 - 3.5.5.1. Forming the ordinal numerals
 - 3.5.5.2. Declension of ordinal numerals
 - 3.5.5.3. The usage of the ordinal numerals

4. VERB

- 4.1. Introduction to the verb
 - 4.1.1. Basic information about verb and conjugation
 - 4.1.2. Identifying the conjugation of a verb
 - 4.1.3. The infinitive
 - 4.1.4. The past participle
 - 4.1.5. Auxiliaries used to form the compound tenses
 - 4.1.6. Infixes
 - 4.1.7. Verbal homonyms and homographs
 - 4.1.7.1. Verbal homonyms
 - 4.1.7.2. Verbal homographs
 - 4.1.8. Forming the negative of the verbs
 - 4.1.9. The interrogative of the verbs
- 4.2. Personal moods
 - 4.2.1. The indicative
 - 4.2.1.1. The present indicative
 - 4.2.1.1.1. The present indicative of the verbs in *-a* (1st conjugation)
 - 4.2.1.1.1.1. Model 1 – without infix
 - 4.2.1.1.1.1.1. Stem of the infinitive ending in a consonant
 - 4.2.1.1.1.1.2. Stem ending in a consonant + *r/l*
 - 4.2.1.1.1.1.3. Stem ending in *-i* after vowel
 - 4.2.1.1.1.1.4. The verb *a întârzia*
 - 4.2.1.1.1.1.5. The verb *a continua*
 - 4.2.1.1.1.2. Model 2 – with the infix *-ez/-eaz-*
 - 4.2.1.1.1.2.1. Stem ending in a consonant, including *r/l*
 - 4.2.1.1.1.2.2. Stem ending in *c/g*
 - 4.2.1.1.1.2.3. Stem ending in *-i*
 - 4.2.1.1.2. The present indicative of the verbs in *-ea* (2nd conjugation)
 - 4.2.1.1.3. The present indicative of the verbs in *-e* (3rd conjugation)
 - 4.2.3.1.1.3.1. Stem ending in a consonant, other than *-n*
 - 4.2.3.1.1.3.2. Stem ending in *-n*
 - 4.2.3.1.1.3.3. Stem ending in a consonant + *r/l*
 - 4.2.3.1.1.3.4. Stem ending in a vowel
 - 4.2.1.1.4. The present indicative of the verbs in *-i* (4th conjugation)
 - 4.2.1.1.4.1. Model 1 – without infix
 - 4.2.1.1.4.1.1. Stem of the infinitive ending in a consonant, other than *-n*

- 4.2.1.1.4.1.2. Stem ending in *-n*
- 4.2.1.1.4.1.3. Stem ending in a vowel, mostly *-u*
- 4.2.1.1.4.2. Model 2 – with the infix *-esc-/-eșt-*
 - 4.2.1.1.4.2.1. Stem ending in a consonant
 - 4.2.1.1.4.2.2. Stem ending in a vowel, mostly *-u*
- 4.2.1.1.5. The present indicative of the verbs in *-î* (4th conjugation)
 - 4.2.1.1.5.1. Model 1 – without infix
 - 4.2.1.1.5.2. Model 2 – with the infix *-ăsc-/-ășt-*
- 4.2.1.1.6. The present indicative of irregular verbs
- 4.2.1.1.7. Using the present indicative
- 4.2.1.2. The compound perfect indicative
 - 4.2.1.2.1. Forming the compound perfect indicative
 - 4.2.1.2.2. Using the compound perfect indicative
- 4.2.1.3. The imperfect indicative
 - 4.2.1.3.1. Forming the imperfect indicative
 - 4.2.1.3.2. Using the imperfect indicative
- 4.2.1.4. The simple perfect indicative
 - 4.2.1.4.1. Forming the simple perfect indicative
 - 4.2.1.4.2. Using the simple perfect indicative
- 4.2.1.5. The pluperfect indicative
 - 4.2.1.5.1. Forming the pluperfect indicative
 - 4.2.1.5.2. Using of the pluperfect indicative
- 4.2.1.6. The future indicative
 - 4.2.1.6.1. Forming the futures of the indicative
 - 4.2.1.6.1.1. Forming the future 1 indicative
 - 4.2.1.6.1.2. Forming the future 2 indicative
 - 4.2.1.6.1.3. Forming the future 3 indicative
 - 4.2.1.6.2. Using of the future indicative
- 4.2.1.7. The future perfect indicative
 - 4.2.1.7.1. Forming the future perfect indicative
 - 4.2.1.7.2. Using the future perfect indicative
- 4.2.1.8. The future in the past indicative
 - 4.2.1.8.1. Forming the future in the past indicative
 - 4.2.1.8.2. Using the future in the past indicative
- 4.2.2. The imperative
 - 4.2.2.1. Forming the imperative
 - 4.2.2.2. Combining the imperative with clitic pronouns
- 4.2.3. The subjunctive
 - 4.2.3.1. The present subjunctive
 - 4.2.3.1.1. Basic rules of forming the present subjunctive
 - 4.2.3.1.1.1. Forming the present subjunctive, 3rd person singular and plural, of the regular verbs
 - 4.2.3.1.1.2. The present subjunctive of the irregular verbs
 - 4.2.3.1.2. Using the present subjunctive
 - 4.2.3.2. The past subjunctive
 - 4.2.3.2.1. Forming the past subjunctive
 - 4.2.3.2.2. Using the past subjunctive
 - 4.2.3.3. Structures with the verb *a putea*
- 4.2.4. The optative-conditional
 - 4.2.4.1. The present optative-conditional
 - 4.2.4.1.1. Forming the present optative-conditional
 - 4.2.4.1.2. Using the present optative-conditional

4.2.4.2. The past optative-conditional

4.2.4.2.1. Forming the past optative-conditional

4.2.4.2.2. Using the past optative-conditional

4.2.5. The presumptive

4.2.5.1. The present presumptive (forms and usage)

4.2.5.2. The present progressive presumptive (forms and usage)

4.2.5.3. The past presumptive (forms and usage)

4.3. Non-personal moods

4.3.1. The infinitive

4.3.2. The past participle

4.3.3. The gerund

4.3.3.1. Forming the gerund

4.3.3.2. Using the gerund

4.3.4. The supine

4.4. Voice

4.4.1. Reflexive voice

4.4.1.1. Reflexive verbs

4.4.1.2. Semantic identity / non-identity of homonym verbs in the active and reflexive voice

4.4.2. Passive voice

4.5. Impersonal and unipersonal verbs

5. ADVERB

5.1. Identifying and forming adverbs

5.2. Adverbs with specific morphological functions

5.3. Interrogative / relative adverbs

5.4. Adverbial structures and phrases

5.5. Semantic groups of adverbs

5.6. Degrees of comparison of the adverb

5.6.1. The comparative degree

5.6.1.1. The comparative of superiority

5.6.1.2. The comparative of equality

5.6.1.3. The comparative of inferiority

5.6.2. The superlative degree

5.6.2.1. The superlative relative of superiority

5.6.2.2. The superlative relative of inferiority

5.6.2.3. The superlative absolute

5.6.3. Adverbs that do not form degrees of comparison

6. PREPOSITION

6.1. Basic features of the prepositions

6.2. Prepositions and cases

6.2.1. Prepositions that require the accusative

6.2.2. Prepositions that require the genitive

6.2.3. Prepositions that require the dative

6.3. Semantic structures with prepositions

6.3.1. Various relations created with prepositions

6.3.2. The usage of prepositions in structures indicating time and space

6.4. Polysemous prepositions

7. CONJUNCTION

7.1. Basic features of the conjunctions

7.2. Conjunctions of coordination

7.2.1. The conjunctions *și* and *iar*

7.2.2. The conjunctions *dar* / *însă* and *ci*

7.2.3. Correlative conjunctions of coordination

7.3. Conjunctions of subordination

7.3.1. Conjunctions of subordination used as grammatical markers

7.3.2. Semantically specialized conjunctions of subordination

7.3.3. Correlative conjunctions of subordination

8. INTERJECTION

8.1. Basic features of the interjections

8.2. Reactive interjections

8.3. Communicative interjections

8.4. Imitative interjections

Bibliography

0. INTRODUCTION

0.1. Romania and the Romanians

Romania (official name *România*) is an East European country located in the geographic center of the European continent, on 43°37'07" and 48°15'06" north latitude and 20°15'44" and 29°41'24" east longitude. The 45th parallel of latitude north (midway between the Equator and the North Pole) crosses Romania 70 km (43.4 miles) north of the capital of the country, Bucharest, and the meridian 25° longitude east (midway between the Atlantic coast and the Ural Mountains) runs 90 km (55.8 miles) west of Bucharest.

Romania borders on the Republic of Moldova to the northeast and east (681.3 km – 422.4 miles), Ukraine to the north and east (649.4 km – 402.6 miles), Bulgaria to the south (631.3 km – 391.4 miles), Serbia to the southwest (546.4 km – 338.7 miles), and Hungary to the west (448 km – 277.7 miles). The total area of the country is 237.5 sq. km (91.699 sq. miles).

Romania is divided almost equally into mountains (31%), hills and plateaus (36%) and plains (33%). The central area of the country, the Transylvanian plateau (*Podișul Transilvaniei*), is surrounded by the Carpathian Mountains (*Munții Carpați*), with the highest peak Moldoveanul (2,543 m – 8,341 ft). The mountains slope into hilly regions which descend gradually into plains. The natural southern border of Romania is the Danube river (*Dunărea*). The Danube Delta (*Delta Dunării*) is almost entirely on Romanian territory. The length of Romania's Black Sea (*Marea Neagră*) coast (to the east) is 234 km (145.08 miles).

The climate is temperate continental; there are oceanic influences from the west, Mediterranean influences from the southwest, and excessive continental influences from the northeast.

The government is a constitutional republic with a multiparty parliamentary system and a bicameral Parliament. The national flag is composed of three equal vertical stripes: blue, yellow and red (beginning from the flagpole). The national seal represents an eagle on a light blue shield, holding a cross in its beak and a sword and scepter in its claws. The coat of arms includes the symbols of the historical provinces – Walachia (*Țara Românească*), Moldavia (*Moldova*), Transylvania (*Transilvania*), Banat (*Banat*) and Dobrudja (*Dobrogea*). The national holiday (since 1990) is December 1, the anniversary of the 1918 union of all Romanians into a single state. The State anthem is a historic patriotic song composed by Anton Pann, with lyrics by Andrei Mureșanu, "Awake, Ye, Romanian" (*Deșteaptă-te, române*).

The population of Romania is 22.4 million (1999). Most of the inhabitants (89.5%) are Romanians, 7.1% are Hungarians, 1.7% Gypsies, 0.5% Germans. Other ethnic groups are: Ukrainians, Russians, Serbs, Croats, Turks, Tartars, Slovaks, Bulgarians, Jews, Czechs, Poles, Greeks, Armenians. About 8 million Romanians live abroad. The urban population represents 55% of the inhabitants.

There are 15 religious denominations officially acknowledged in Romania. The most comprehensive are: the Romanian Orthodox Church (86.8%), the Roman Catholic Church (5.0%), the Reformed Church (3.5%), the Romanian Church United with Rome / the Greek-Catholic Church (1.0%), the Pentecostal religion (1.0%), the Christian Baptist religion (0.5%), the Unitarian Church (0.3%), the Seventh-Day Adventist religion (0.3%), the Evangelical Church of Augustan Confession (0.2%), the Muslim religion (0.2%), the Evangelical Synodo-Presbyterian Church (0.1%), the Christians of Old Rite (0.1%), and the Mosaic religion (0.1%).

The main administrative units in Romania are the county (*județ*), the town (*oraș*) and the commune (*comună*). There are 41 counties plus the capital city, which has a county status, 262 towns, of which 80 are municipalities, and 2,687 communes with 13,285 villages. The capital of Romania is Bucharest, a municipality divided into six administrative

zones (*sectoare*), with a population of 2.07 million (1999). Bucharest is located in the Romanian Plain (*Câmpia Română*), along the river Dâmbovița. Bucharest first appears in a written document in 1459, when it is mentioned as the city of residence of Vlad the Impaler (*Vlad Țepeș*, also known as Dracula). Bucharest became the capital of Romania in 1862. Other important cities in Romania are: Iași (population: 348,000), Constanța (346,000), Cluj-Napoca (334,000), Timișoara (333,000), Galați (329,000), Brașov (319,000), Craiova (313,000).

Romania lies in the East European time zone (GMT + 2 hours), in the same time zone as Finland, Greece, Israel, Egypt and the Republic of South Africa. The metric system has been in use since 1866. The national currency in Romania is *leu*, plural *lei*, *ROL* on international markets (\$1 = 32,000 lei as for February 2004). The domestic convertibility of the *leu* was introduced in November 1991.

0.2. The Romanian language

The official language of Romania is Romanian, an Indo-European, neo-Latin language, the easternmost representative of the family of Romance languages. In terms of sonority, Romanian is very similar to Italian. The Romanian language is the result of the evolution of the Latin spoken in Dacia and Moesia after they were conquered and colonized by the Roman Empire. The lands north of the Danube, inhabited by Dacians, were conquered in the 2nd century, but the territories south of the Danube had already been occupied two centuries before. The populations living around the Danube used similar dialects to communicate, and their material and spiritual were very close in many ways. The Roman colonists spoke the vernacular version of Latin called Vulgar Latin, which differed from cultivated Latin. The province of Dacia was colonized rapidly, and Latin proved to be strong enough to dissolve and assimilate the native dialects. Rapid Romanization, early Christianity, the day-to-day life that continued in Dacia after the withdrawal of the Roman administration in 271 – all these elements prove that the transformation of Latin into a new language began very soon after the Romans started the colonization of the lands of Dacians, when the symbiosis between the conquerors and the local population became real. This was a very long process, and it is difficult to state when exactly it was completed. Most specialists agree that in the 10th century Romanian as a language with its own distinctive features was already in use.

Over the centuries, the new language experienced numerous external influences, mostly at the lexical level. At the grammatical level, Romanian is one of the most conservative Romance languages, which is due to the fact that the speakers belonged to a marginal area, isolated from the rest of the Romance world. Some scholars consider Romanian the most "pure" Romance language in terms of grammar, i.e. the closest to Latin. However, the nature of this language, especially its vocabulary, has been shaped by various historical influences. Romanian has assimilated Slavic, Hungarian, Turkish, and neo-Romance elements.

The grammatical structure and the basic word stock of the Romanian language have been inherited from Latin. As in all the other Romance languages, in Romanian there is a substratum (i.e. those elements of the native dialects which were incorporated into the Vulgar Latin) and a superstratum (i.e. the new elements that penetrated the new Romanian language as a result of the invasions of the migratory peoples). In Romanian, the substratum is Dacian, and the superstratum is mostly Slavic. The elements of the substratum are difficult to identify, since there are no reliable sources. The criteria linguists unanimously accept would be the comparison with the Albanian language, considered to be the direct continuation of the Thracian dialects. Linguists have studied the Romanian language in comparison with other Balkan languages, especially Albanian, in an attempt to find words of Dacian origin. Some 160 such words have been identified, among them terms related to the human body, family relationships, pastoral activities, agriculture, viticulture, pisciculture, etc.

Contacts with the Slavic dialects date back to the 6th or 7th century. The Slavic dialects influenced Romanian, since the local population and the newcomers engaged in cohabitation. Two things suggest that when the Slavic element began to influence Romanian, the latter was already a language in its own right. First of all, Romanian morphology preserved almost unaltered its Latin structure. Second, certain phonetic laws typical for Latin did not operate on the new lexical elements coming from the Slavic superstratum.

It is important to mention that Romanian did not experience the influence of classical Latin, as other Romance languages did. In the Catholic areas (Italy, France, Spain), Latin was the language of culture and religion, while Slavonic was used in the Orthodox Church and in the administration of the Romanian States. Until the 19th century, Romanian texts were also written in Cyrillic, with adjustments for certain phonetic features of Romanian. It is therefore not surprising that at the end of the 18th and the beginning of the 19th century there emerged among Romanian intellectuals a strong reaction against the Slavic elements present in the language. A process of systematic re-Latinization of Romanian begun, mainly supported by Romanian writers. As a result, a massive amount of terms borrowed from other Romance languages penetrated Romanian. Linguistic research shows that 20% of the Romanian vocabulary is inherited from Latin, 14% are Slavic borrowings (Old Slavic, Bulgarian, Serb, Croatian, Ukrainian, Russian), 2.37% Greek borrowings, 2.17% Hungarian borrowings, 3.7% Turkish, 2.3% Germanic, 38.4% French, 2.4% by borrowings from the classic Latin, 1.7% borrowings from Italian. There are many elements in Romanian whose origin cannot be established precisely. The most intense and active influence in Romanian today, as in other European and especially East European countries and languages, is that of American English.

1. ALPHABET AND PHONETICS

1.1. The Romanian alphabet

The Romanian writing system uses the Latin alphabet, with 5 additional letters formed with diacritics: **Ă, ă; â; Î, î; Ș, ș; Ț, ț**. In reading and writing Romanian, the general rule is that one letter corresponds to one sound. There are, however, some situations in which several letters correspond to one sound, or several sounds to one letter.

The letters and their names in Romanian are:

A, a (a); **Ă, ă** (ă); **â** (â din a); **B, b** (be), **C, c** (ce); **D, d** (de), **E, e** (e); **F, f** (fe / ef); **G, g** (ghe / ge); **H, h** (ha / haș); **I, i** (i); **Î, î** (î din i); **J, j** (je), **K, k** (ka de la kilogram), **L, l** (le / el); **M, m** (me / em); **N, n** (ne / en); **O, o** (o); **P, p** (pe); **R, r** (re / er); **S, s** (se / es); **Ș, ș** (șe); **T, t** (te); **Ț, ț** (țe); **U, u** (u); **V, v** (ve); **X, x** (ics); **Z, z** (ze / zet).

The letters correspond to sounds as follows :

Letter	Sound	Examples
A, a	[a]; vowel, central, open, slightly rounded; similar to a in father	<i>cap</i> head, <i>masă</i> table, <i>palat</i> palace, <i>magazin</i> store, <i>pijama</i> pajamas
Ă, ă	[ə]; vowel, central, half-open, slightly rounded; similar to a in about , or to e(r) in father	<i>măr</i> apple, <i>masă</i> table, <i>pătrat</i> square, <i>capăt</i> end, <i>păcăleală</i> hoax
â – this letter does not occur in word-initial or word-final positions	[y]; vowel, central, close, unrounded; it is pronounced somewhat like the sound [ə], but farther back and higher, like a sound between i and u	<i>mână</i> hand, <i>când</i> when, <i>bătrân</i> old, <i>pâine</i> bread, <i>cântând</i> singing
B, b	[b]; consonant, plosive, bilabial, voiced; like b in bar	<i>barcă</i> boat, <i>bine</i> good, <i>brad</i> fir tree, <i>bluză</i> blouse, <i>absolut</i> absolute
C, c 1. when followed by a, ă, â, o, u , or consonants, or in final position 2. in the groups che, chi 3. in the groups ce, ci	[k]; consonant, plosive, velar, voiceless; like c in car [kʰ]; consonant, plosive, palatal, voiceless; like k in keen or kennel [tʃ]; consonant, affricate, pre-palatal, voiceless; like ch in charter	<i>cap</i> head, <i>cămașă</i> shirt, <i>cântec</i> song, <i>corp</i> body, <i>actor</i> actor, <i>acru</i> sour <i>chenar</i> border, <i>rachetă</i> rocket, <i>chitară</i> guitar, <i>achiziție</i> acquisition <i>cer</i> sky, <i>a face</i> to do, <i>afacere</i> business, <i>cine</i> who, <i>circ</i> circus, <i>aici</i> here, <i>ciorbă</i> sour soup

D, d	[d]; consonant, plosive, dental, voiced; similar to d in dare , but dental, not alveolar	da yes, adesea often, adresă address, a admira to admire, adversar opponent, când when
E, e 1. all the positions, except the one below 2. pre-vocalic, non-syllabic	[e] vowel, front, half-open, unrounded; similar to e in send ; in some situations (some personal pronouns and forms of the verb a fi to be, inherited from Latin) in word-initial position, it is preceded by the semivowel [ʲ] [e] semivowel, front, half-open, unrounded	elefant elephant, bere beer, regulă rule, avere fortune, cerere request eu I, ei they, este is a bea to drink, a vedea to see, teamă fear
F, f	[f]; consonant, fricative, labio-dental, voiceless; like f in far	far lighthouse, floare flower, afacere business, praf dust
G, g 1. when followed by a, ă, â, o, u , or consonants, or final position 2. in the groups ghe, ghi 3. in the groups ge, gi	[g]; consonant, plosive, velar, voiced; like g in garment or grade [gʲ]; consonant, plosive, palatal, voiced; like g in get or gift , but more palatal [dʒ]; consonant, affricate, pre-palatal, voiced; like j in job	gard fence, găină hen, gând thought, gură mouth, grad degree, glumă joke, fag beech tree ghețar glacier, înghețată ice-cream, ghid guide, ghindă acorn, unghie finger nail gen gender, ager quick, a merge to walk, gin gin, magician magician, a fugi to run
H, h	[h]; consonant, fricative, laryngeal, voiceless; like h in hi	haină cloth, hotărâre decision, hrană food, autohton native
I, i 1. in initial position before a consonant; in medial position, in final position when stressed and after the groups cl, cr, dr, str, ștr 2. in initial position before a vowel, in final position after a vowel 3. in final position after consonants, non-syllabic	[i]; vowel, front, close, unrounded; longer than the short i in win and shorter than the long i in deep [i̯]; semi-vowel, front, close, unrounded; like y in yes or in boy [i̯]; short semivowel, front, close, unrounded, indicating the palatal or palatalized character of the previous consonant	inimă heart, million million, a iubi to love, a orbi to blind, mândri proud (m., pl.), albaștri blue (m., pl.) iarnă winter, iepure rabbit, a iubi to love, convoi convoy, evantai fan, pui chicken unchi uncle, albi white (m., pl.), maci poppy flowers, dragi dear (m., pl.), calmi calm (m., pl.), ani years, pași

		steps, <i>frați</i> brothers
Î, î – this letter occurs at the beginning or at the end of a word, i.e. in initial or final position, as well as at the beginning of the second component of a compound word	[y]; vowel, central, close, unrounded; the same sound as for â	<i>înger</i> angel, <i>întâmplare</i> happening, <i>a coborî</i> to descend, <i>multîndrăgît</i> beloved
J, j	[ʒ]; consonant, fricative, pre-palatal, voiced; like s in pleasure	<i>jad</i> jade, <i>joi</i> Thursday, <i>ajutor</i> help, <i>bagaj</i> luggage
K, k – this letter occurs just in several neologisms	[k], [k']; consonant, plosive, palatal, voiceless; like k in keen	<i>kaki</i> khaki, <i>kilogram</i> kilogram, <i>kilometru</i> kilometer
L, l	[l]; sonant, lateral, dental; like l in life	<i>lapte</i> milk, <i>leu</i> lion, <i>liceu</i> high school, <i>altitudine</i> altitude, <i>elefant</i> elephant, <i>cal</i> horse
M, m	[m]; sonant, nasal, bilabial; like m in man	<i>mare</i> big, <i>mănușă</i> glove, <i>mâine</i> tomorrow, <i>motan</i> tomcat, <i>munte</i> mountain, <i>ambianță</i> ambiance, <i>gem</i> jam
N, n	[n]; sonant, nasal, dental; like n in nose	<i>nas</i> nose, <i>nerv</i> nerve, <i>nomad</i> nomad, <i>nume</i> name, <i>încă</i> yet, <i>unde</i> where, <i>ban</i> coin, <i>nebun</i> crazy
O, o 1. all the positions except the one below 2. pre-vocal, non-syllabic	[o]; vowel, back, half-open, rounded; like o in order [°]; semivowel, back, half-open, rounded	<i>ochi</i> eye, <i>oraș</i> city, <i>obicei</i> habit, <i>cocoș</i> cock <i>oaie</i> sheep, <i>școală</i> school
P, p	[p] consonant, plosive, bilabial, voiceless; like p in park	<i>pahar</i> glass, <i>capac</i> lid, <i>cap</i> head, <i>preț</i> price, <i>corp</i> body, <i>lapte</i> milk
R, r	[r]; sonant, rolled, apical, dental; similar to r in bread but trilled	<i>ramă</i> frame, <i>moral</i> moral, <i>pahar</i> glass, <i>artă</i> art, <i>carne</i> meat

S, s	[s]; consonant, fricative, dental, voiceless; like s in sound	<i>sare</i> salt, <i>seră</i> greenhouse, <i>pas</i> step, <i>veste</i> news, <i>a asculta</i> to listen
Ș, ș	[ʃ] consonant, fricative, pre-palatal, voiceless; like sh in sharp	<i>șarpe</i> snake, <i>șoarece</i> mouse, <i>a aștepta</i> to wait, <i>laș</i> coward
T, t	[t]; consonant, plosive, dental, voiceless; similar to t in team , but dental, not alveolar	<i>temă</i> theme, <i>tânăr</i> young, <i>alt</i> other, <i>așteptare</i> waiting
Ț, ț	[ts]; consonant, affricate, dental, voiceless; like ts in its	<i>țap</i> goat (male), <i>laț</i> noose, <i>cuțit</i> knife, <i>marți</i> Tuesday
U, u 1. all positions except 2 2. pre- and post-vocalic, non-syllabic	[u]; vowel, back, close, rounded; like u in rule [ʊ]; semivowel, back, close, rounded; like w in want	<i>unde</i> where, <i>sunet</i> sound, <i>lung</i> long <i>ouă</i> eggs, <i>două</i> two (f.)
V, v	[v]; consonant, fricative, labio-dental, voiced; like v in voice	<i>vas</i> vessel, <i>vamă</i> customs, <i>avar</i> greedy, <i>acvariu</i> aquarium
X, x	[ks]; group of two consonants: k+s [gʒ]; group of two consonants: g+z	<i>pix</i> ball pen, <i>taxi</i> taxi, <i>excepție</i> exception <i>examen</i> exam, <i>exemplu</i> example
Z, z	[ʒ]; consonant, fricative, dental, voiced; like z in zero	<i>zar</i> die, <i>zero</i> zero, <i>zână</i> fairy, <i>gaz</i> gas, <i>barză</i> stork

In foreign words, especially proper nouns, letters like **Q, q; W, w; Y, y; Ū, ū; Ö, ö;** etc. are used, e.g. *Quinet, Washington, Müller, Böhm, yoga, New York*, etc. As a rule, foreign word are pronounced in Romanian as close as possible to the foreign language they come from.

1.2. Potential difficulties related to pronunciation and reading

1.2.1. Pronunciation

1.2.1.1. Vowels [ə] and [y]

There are two specific vowels, [ə] and [y] in Romanian that do not have an equivalent in English. The other vowels are similar to the English vowels, but they are of medium length, i.e. they are shorter than long vowels and longer than short vowels in English.

The vowel [ə], written as *ă*, is similar to the final vowel in "father" or "mother", but slightly different: *măr* apple, *casă* house, *rău* bad. The sound [ə] and the letter *ă* seldom occur in a word-initial position. The most common examples are the colloquial forms of some demonstrative pronouns: *ăsta* this, *ăștia* these, *ăla* those, *ăia* those.

The vowel [y], written as *â* or *î*, does not have an equivalent in English. It is sometimes explained as a blend between [i] and [u]. It is a close central vowel, more close and higher than [ə]: *încă* yet, *înger* angel, *întâmplare* happening, *împreună* together, *mână* hand, *lână* wool, *mâine* tomorrow, *câine* dog, *pâine* bread, *lămâie* lemon, *tămâie* incense, *călcâie* heels, *a hotărî* to decide, *a coborî* to descend.

1.2.1.2. Consonants [r], [t] and [d]

The consonant [r] is rolled and includes a slight vibration of the tip of the tongue. It is pronounced in all positions: *ramă* frame, *armă* weapon, *aramă* copper, *amar* bitter, *amărăciune* bitterness.

The consonants [t] and [d] are dental consonants (their equivalents in English are alveolar): *tabu* taboo, *atent* attentive, *atractiv* attractive, *pat* bed, *dom* dome, *adevăr* truth, *adrenalină* adrenaline, *pod* bridge.

1.2.2. Reading

1.2.2.1. Unique letters

Romanian has several characters that do not exist in the English alphabet.

The letter *ă* represents a sound close to the initial vowel in 'about', or to the final vowel in 'mother': *mătură* broom, *pătură* blanket, *săptămână* week.

The letters *â* and *î* both represent the sound [y] that does not have an equivalent in English. The letter *â* never occurs at the beginning of a word, at the beginning of a part of a compound word or in a word-final position. In these positions *î* is used: *înger* angel, *în* in, *a coborî* to descend, *încântător* charming, *multîncercat* experienced.

The letter *ș* represents a sound similar to the English [ʃ] in 'sharp', 'cash': *șapte* seven, *școală* school, *știre* news, *oraș* city.

The letter *ț* represents the sound similar to the English [ts] in 'its': *țară* country, *țigară* cigarette, *arțar* maple tree, *struț* ostrich.

1.2.2.2. The letter *i* in final position

The letter *i* in final position after consonants stands for a very short [i] sound, shorter and less sonorous than the syllabic [i]. It is a distinctive sound that marks the opposition between the singular and plural of certain nouns and adjectives: *pom* tree – *pomi* trees, *școală* school – *școli* schools, *soț* husband – *soți* husbands, *bun* good (m. sg.) – *buni* good (m. pl.), *liber* free (m. sg.) – *liberi* free (m. pl.), as well as between 1st and 2nd person of the indicative or subjunctive present of verbs: *eu întreb* I ask – *tu întrebi* you ask, *eu lucrez* I work – *tu lucrezi* you work. It also occurs in the verbal auxiliaries *ați*, *veți*, *oți*, at the end of some pronominal forms (*îmi*, *își*, *îți*), and at the end of some other words.

There are nouns in Romanian that have two letters *i* in the word-final position. These are read as [iⁱ]. Even three letters *i* can appear, and are read as [ii]. The two-*i* combination can happen when the plural ending *i* comes after a stem ending in *-i* (when it replaces another vowel, as in *fotoliu* armchair – *fotolii* armchairs) or when the ending *-i* is

joined by the definite article *-i* (*ministru* minister – *miniștri* ministers – *miniștrii* the ministers; *membbru* member – *membri* members – *membrii* the members). The group of three *i* can be found in the plural of a few nouns and adjectives when they are used with the definite article *-i*: *copil* child – *copii* children – *copiii* the children, *propriu* own (m. sing. no article) – *proprii* own (m. pl. no article) – *propriii* own (m. pl. def. article).

1.2.2.3. The letter *e* in initial position

Initial *e* in words that come from Latin (some personal pronouns and some forms of the verb *a fi* to be) stands for the diphthong [i¹e]: *eu* I, *ea* she, *el* he, *ei* they, *ești* (you) are, *este* (he / she) is, *e* (he / she) is.

In neologisms, initial *e* is pronounced [e]: *electricitate* electricity, *emoție* emotion, *elev* student, *extraterestru* alien.

1.2.2.4. The *ce, ci, ge, gi, che, chi, ghe, ghi* groups

The groups of letters *ce* and *ci* represent the sound [tʃ] like in 'chart', 'much', etc., and the groups *ge* and *gi* stand for the sound [dʒ] like in 'germ', 'edge', etc.: *ce* what, *acesta* this, *pace* peace, *cine* who, *acid* acid, *a munci* to work, *gem* jam, *agent* agent, *a merge* to walk, *gin* gin, *agitat* restless, *a fugi* to run.

The groups of letters *che* and *chi* represent the sound [kʰ] like in 'chemistry', 'keen', etc. and the groups *ghe* and *ghi* represent the sound [gʰ] like in 'together', 'geek', etc.: *chenar* border, *pachet* pack, *chin* torture, *rechin* shark, *a ochi* to aim, *ochi* eye, *ghete* boots, *înghețată* ice cream, *ghinion* bad luck, *pârghie* lever.

1.2.2.5. Diphthongs and triphthongs

The groups of two or three vowels forming diphthongs and triphthongs are numerous in Romanian. There are falling diphthongs (in which the stress is on the first vowel) and rising diphthongs (the stress is on the second vowel).

Falling diphthongs (vowel + semivowel): **au** [a^u] *erau* they were; **ău** [ə^u] *rău* bad; **âu** [y^u] *râu* river; **eu** [e^u] *leu* lion; **iu** [i^u] *auriu* golden; **ou** [o^u] egg; **birou** office; **ai** [aⁱ] *tramvai* tram; **ăi** [əⁱ] *răi* bad (m., pl.); **âi** [yⁱ] *mâine* tomorrow; **ei** [eⁱ] *lei* lions; **oi** [oⁱ] *gunoi* trash; **ui** [uⁱ] *spui* you say.

Rising diphthongs (semivowel + vowel): **ea** [e^a] *cafea* coffee; **ia** [i^a] *iarnă* winter; **ie** [i^e] *iepure* rabbit; **io** [i^o] *iod* iodine; **iu** [i^u] *iute* quick; **oa** [o^a] *școală* school; **ua** [u^a] *ziua* during the day; **uă** [u^ă] *ziuă* day.

Triphthongs (semivowel + vowel + semivowel): **eai** [e^{aⁱ}] *vedeai* you were seeing (sing.); **eau** [e^{a^u}] *vedeau* they were seeing; **iai** [i^{aⁱ}] *tăiai* you were cutting (sing.); **iau** [i^{a^u}] *tăiau* they were cutting; **iei** [i^{eⁱ}] *miei* lambs; **oai** [o^{aⁱ}] *frânzuoică* French woman; **ioa** [i^{o^a}] *creioane* pencils.

1.2.2.6. Vowels in hiatus

The same combination of two or three vowel letters can stand both for diphthongs / triphthongs and for vowels in hiatus – **au**: *au* they have, but *a | ur* gold; **ăi**: *răi* bad (m., pl.), but *stră | in* stranger; **ea**: *rea* bad (f., sing.), but *re | al* real; **ui**: *uitare* oblivion, but *ru | ină* ruin, **ioa**: *creioane* pencils, but *avi | oane* planes.

1.2.2.7. Stress

The stress can fall on any syllable of the word: — ⊥ *ca-fea* coffee; ⊥ — *ca-să* house; — — ⊥ *pi-ja-ma* pajamas; — ⊥ — *pe-re-te* wall; ⊥ — — *re-pe-de* quickly; — — — ⊥ *pa-ta-la-ma* document (arh.); — — ⊥ — *pro-fe-soa-ră* teacher (fem.); — ⊥ — — *pe-re-te-le* the wall; ⊥ — — — *la-cu-ri-le* the lakes; — — — — ⊥ *a în-tre-bu-in-ța* to use; — — — ⊥ — *as-cu-ți-toa-re* pencil sharpener; — — ⊥ — — *li-pi-to-ri-le* the leeches; — ⊥ — — — — *fa-mi-li-i-le* the families.

The stress can play a role of semantic or grammatical differentiation. The position of the stress can be the only difference between two words or grammatical forms written identically: *veselă* happy (fem.) — *veselă* plates; *copii* copies — *copii* children; *el întră* (indicative present) he is coming in — *el întră* (indicative simple perfect) he just came in.

1.2.2.8. Liaison

Hiatus between the final vowel of a word and the initial vowel of the following word is very rare. Two types of liaison (synaeresis and elision) are therefore extremely frequent:

1. Synaeresis occurs when one of the two vowels is pronounced as a semi-vowel: *Bine-ăți venit!* Welcome! *Cine-a sunat?* Who called?. Although not compulsory, a hyphen often indicates synaeresis, mainly in literary texts simulating ctual speech.
2. Elision occurs when one of the two vowels must be elided, and synaeresis is not possible. In some situations the elision is required, as in the case of some combinations between unstressed personal pronouns or reflexive pronouns and verbal forms: personal or reflexive pronoun *mă* + the auxiliary forms *a, am, ați, au, aș, ai, ar, am* will always have the elision: *m-a văzut* he, she saw me, *m-aș odihni* I would like to rest, etc. In most cases the elision is optional, but very frequent, e.g. the elision of the vowel *î* in the preposition *în*: *Cine așteaptă-n curte?* instead of *Cine așteaptă în curte?* Who is waiting in the yard?; or the elision of the vowel *u* in the negation *nu*: *N-am timp.* instead of *Nu am timp.* I don't have time. In case of elision, hyphenation is required.

2. MORPHOPHONEMICS

2.1. Inflection

Romanian is an inflected language: certain categories of words (nouns, articles, adjectives, pronouns, numerals, verbs) are varied (or inflected) in form in order to express grammatical relations. Applying inflection never produces a new word, but only a different form of the same word (i.e. a word form with the same lexical meaning). There are declinable, conjugated and invariable words in Romanian.

2.1.1. Declension of nominals

The noun and other nominal parts of speech (article, adjective, pronoun, and numeral) are declinable in Romanian. The nominals are declined according to the cases. The case of a word reveals the relationship between a word and other elements in the sentence, as well as its function in that sentence: subject, direct object, indirect object, the object of a preposition. The grammatical meaning of a word is reflected by a change in its case. English has two cases – the nominative (for the function of subject and object) and the genitive (for possession): *Andrew* – nominative (*Andrew has a younger sister.*) and *Andrew's* – genitive (*Andrew's sister is younger than Andrew.*). Romanian's case system is more developed.

There are five cases in Romanian: nominative, genitive, dative, accusative, and vocative. In form the nominative and the accusative are identical, and so are the genitive and the dative. Functionally, they differ: the nominative is primarily used to express the subject, while the accusative is the case of the direct object. The dative is the case of the indirect object, while the genitive is mainly the case of possession. The vocative is the case of direct address. Examples:

- nominative: *Băiatul este aici.* The boy is here.
- accusative: *Văd băiatul.* I can see the boy.
- genitive: *Cartea băiatului este aici.* The boy's book is here.
- dative: *Îi dau cartea băiatului!* I give the book to the boy!
- vocative: — *Băiete, vino încoace!* — Boy, come here!

A distinctive feature of Romanian is that it is the proclitic (indefinite) or enclitic (definite) article which actually changes throughout the declension. The ending for the genitive-dative feminine is the only ending that is attached to the noun itself.

2.1.2. Conjugation of verbs

Romanian has a rich system of suffixes and endings that indicate different moods and tenses. There are four groups (conjugations) of verbs in Romanian, according to the ending of the infinitive form (the dictionary form of the verb).

The different forms of the verbs show:

- mood: personal moods – indicative, imperative, subjunctive, optative-conditional and presumptive; non-personal moods – infinitive, participle, gerund and supine
- tense: present, compound perfect, simple perfect, imperfect, pluperfect, future (three equivalent forms of future), future perfect and future in the past in the indicative mood; present and past in the subjunctive; present and past in the optative-conditional; present and past in the presumptive; present and past in the infinitive; past in the participle

- **person**: 1st, 2nd and 3rd in the personal moods, and the possibility of combining the infinitive and the gerund with reflexive pronouns in different persons
- **number**: singular and plural
- **gender**: masculine, feminine and neuter for the past participle in the passive, as well as for the gerund (when used as supplemental predicative element or attribute)
- **voice**: active, passive and reflexive.

Below is the complete paradigm of the verb **a cânta** to sing, to play an instrument in the 1st pers. sing. for all the personal moods and in the 2nd pers. sing. in the imperative:

INDICATIVE							
pluperfect <i>cântasem</i>	simple perfect <i>cântai</i>	compound perfect <i>am cântat</i>	imperfect <i>cântam</i>	present <i>cânt</i>	future 1, 2, 3 <i>voi cânta, o să cânt, am să cânt</i>	future perfect <i>voi fi cântat</i>	future in the past <i>aveam să cânt</i>
SUBJUNCTIVE							
past <i>să fi cântat</i>			present <i>să cânt</i>				
OPTATIVE-CONDITIONAL							
past <i>aș fi cântat</i>			present <i>aș cânta</i>				
PRESUMPTIVE							
past <i>oi fi cântat</i>			present <i>oi cânta, oi fi cântând</i>				
IMPERATIVE							
<i>cântă !</i>							
INFINITIVE							
past <i>a fi cântat</i>			present <i>a cânta</i>				
PARTICIPLE							
past <i>cântat</i>							
GERUND							
<i>cântând</i>							
SUPINE							
<i>de cântat</i>							

There are five personal moods: indicative, imperative, subjunctive, optative-conditional, and presumptive. There are four non-personal moods: infinitive, participle, gerund, supine. Most of these moods have two tenses (present and past), some have only one tense, and one of them, the indicative, has eight tenses (one present tense, four past tenses and three future tenses).

The tenses in Romanian are of two basic kinds. There are simple tenses that consist of one word – the main verb stem plus different suffixes and endings. These include present indicative, imperfect indicative, simple perfect indicative, and pluperfect indicative. There are also compound tenses (consisting of different combinations of auxiliary elements and the infinitive or the past participle of the main verb) – compound perfect indicative, the futures of the indicative, past subjunctive, present and past optative-conditional, present and past presumptive, past infinitive.

2.1.3. Invariable parts of speech

Adverbs, prepositions, conjunctions and interjections are invariable parts of speech – they never change their form.

2.2. Common morphophonemic alternations

Morphophonemic alternations within different forms of one word or a group of related words (words that have the same stem) are one of the most noticeable features of the Romanian language. They are brought about by the new phonetic context created when the inflectional or derivative elements are added to the stem. Changes in the location of the stressed syllable also can bring about morphophonemic alternations. These mutations are quite common in the nominal declension and in conjugation. They also function as a redundant means of marking morphological categories. There are vowel and consonant mutations in Romanian.

2.2.1. Vowel mutations

Vowel mutations appear in the last vowel (usually stressed) of the stem and are generated by the presence of the vowels **ă**, **e** or **i** in the following syllable (*o/ea; e/ea; ă/e; a/e; a/ă; ea/e; oa/o; ie/ia; â/i*). Vowel mutations can also be generated by a change of the stressed syllable (*a/ă; u/o*).

2.2.1.1. o/oa mutation

o followed by a consonant or consonant cluster mutates to **oa** with the next syllable containing **ă** or **e**

nouns	sing./pl. neuter nouns: <i>avion</i> plane – <i>avioane</i> , <i>camion</i> truck – <i>camioane</i> , <i>izvor</i> water spring – <i>izvoare</i> masc./fem.: <i>domn</i> sir, mister – <i>doamnă</i> lady, madam, <i>prost</i> fool (m.) – <i>proastă</i> fool (f.)
adjectives	masc./fem.: <i>frumos</i> beautiful (m., sg) – <i>frumoasă</i> beautiful (f., sg.), <i>frumoși</i> beautiful (m., pl.) – <i>frumoase</i> beautiful (f., pl.), <i>orb</i> blind (m., sg.) – <i>oarbă</i> blind (f., sg.), <i>orbi</i> blind (m., pl.) – <i>oarbe</i> blind (f., pl.)
verbs	indicative present: <i>a muri</i> to die: <i>eu mor</i> – <i>el moare</i> , <i>a coborî</i> to descend: <i>eu cobor</i> – <i>el coboară</i> subjunctive present: <i>a muri</i> to die: <i>eu să mor</i> – <i>el să moară</i> , <i>a coborî</i> to descend: <i>eu să cobor</i> – <i>el să coboare</i>
derivation	<i>mort</i> dead – <i>moarte</i> death
other	possessive pron./adj.: <i>al nostru</i> – <i>a noastră</i> – <i>ai noștri</i> – <i>ale noastre</i> our(s)

2.2.1.2. e/ea mutation

e followed by a consonant or consonant cluster mutates to **ea** when the next syllable contains **ă**

adjectives	masc./fem.: <i>românesc</i> Romanian (m., sg.) – <i>românească</i> Romanian (f., sg.), <i>negru</i> black (m., sg.) – <i>neagră</i> black (f., sg.)
verbs	indicative present: <i>a chema</i> to call: <i>eu chem</i> – <i>el cheamă</i> , <i>a pleca</i> to leave: <i>eu plec</i> – <i>el pleacă</i> subjunctive present: <i>a merge</i> to walk: <i>eu să merg</i> – <i>el să meargă</i> , <i>a șterge</i> to wipe: <i>eu să șterg</i> – <i>el să șteargă</i>

2.2.1.3. ă/e mutation

ă followed by a consonant, consonant cluster, or a syllable containing **ă** mutates to **e** with the next syllable containing **e** or **i**

nouns	sing./pl.: <i>capăt</i> extremity – <i>capete</i> , <i>sâmbătă</i> Saturday – <i>sâmbete</i> , <i>număr</i> number – <i>numere</i> , <i>măr</i> apple – <i>mere</i> , <i>măr</i> apple tree – <i>meri</i>
adjectives	sing./pl.: <i>proaspăt</i> fresh (m., sg.) – <i>proaspeți</i> fresh (m., pl.), <i>proaspătă</i> fresh (f., sg.) – <i>proaspete</i> fresh (f., pl.)
verbs	indicative present: <i>a număra</i> to count: <i>eu număr</i> – <i>tu numeri</i> , <i>a vedea</i> to see: <i>eu văd</i> – <i>tu vezi</i> subjunctive present: <i>a număra</i> to count: <i>eu să număr</i> – <i>tu să numeri</i> , <i>a vedea</i> to see: <i>eu să văd</i> – <i>tu să vezi</i>

2.2.1.4. a/e mutation

(i)a followed by a syllable containing **ă** or **e** mutates to (i)e with the next syllable containing **e** or (ur)i

nouns	sing./pl.: <i>masă</i> table – <i>mese</i> , <i>fată</i> girl – <i>fete</i> , <i>piatră</i> stone – <i>pietre</i> , <i>iarnă</i> winter – <i>ierni</i> , <i>viață</i> life – <i>vieți</i> , <i>iarbă</i> grass – <i>ierburi</i> , <i>băiat</i> boy – <i>băieți</i>
adjectives	sing./pl.: <i>belgian</i> Belgian (m., sg.) – <i>belgieni</i> Belgian (m., pl.), <i>canadian</i> Canadian (m., sg.) – <i>canadieni</i> Canadian (m., pl.)
verbs	indicative present: <i>a lua</i> to take: <i>eu iau</i> – <i>tu iei</i> subjunctive present: <i>a lua</i> to take: <i>eu să iau</i> – <i>tu să iei</i>

2.2.1.5. a/ă mutation

a followed by a syllable containing **ă** or **e** mutates to **ă** with the next syllable containing (ur)i

nouns	sing./pl.: <i>țară</i> country – <i>țări</i> , <i>gară</i> station – <i>gări</i> , <i>carne</i> meat – <i>cărnuri</i> , <i>-are</i> / <i>-ări</i> : <i>lucrare</i> paper – <i>lucrări</i> , <i>întâmplare</i> event – <i>întâmplări</i> , <i>-ate</i> / <i>-ăți</i> : <i>cetate</i> fortress – <i>cetăți</i> , <i>-itate</i> / <i>-ități</i> : <i>entitate</i> entity – <i>entități</i>
-------	---

2.2.1.6. ea/e mutation

ea followed by a consonant(s) or a syllable containing **ă** mutates to **e** with the next syllable containing **e** or (ur)i

nouns	sing./pl.: <i>armean</i> Armenian – <i>armeni</i> , <i>armeancă</i> Armenian woman – <i>armence</i> , <i>dimineată</i> morning – <i>dimineți</i>
adjectives	sing./pl.: <i>viclean</i> sly (m., sg.) – <i>vicleni</i> sly (m., pl.), <i>viteaz</i> brave (m., sg.) – <i>viteji</i> brave (m., pl.)
verbs	indicative present: <i>a bea</i> to drink: <i>eu beau</i> – <i>tu bei</i> , <i>a vrea</i> to want: <i>eu vreau</i> – <i>tu vrei</i> subjunctive present: <i>a bea</i> to drink: <i>eu să beau</i> – <i>tu să bei</i> , <i>a vrea</i> to want: <i>eu să vreau</i> – <i>tu să vrei</i>

2.2.1.7. oa/o mutation

oa followed by a syllable containing **ă** or **e** mutates to **o** and the **ă** or **e** in the next syllable change into **i**

nouns	sing./pl.: <i>boală</i> disease – <i>boli</i> , <i>floare</i> flower – <i>flori</i> , <i>foaie</i> sheet – <i>foi</i> , <i>ascuțitoare</i> pencil sharpener – <i>ascuțitori</i>
adjectives	sing./pl.: <i>moale</i> soft – <i>moi</i> soft (pl.)

verbs	indicative present: <i>a se scula</i> to get up: <i>el se scoală – tu te scoli</i> subjunctive present: <i>a se scula</i> to get up: <i>el să se scoale – tu să te scoli</i>
-------	---

2.2.1.8. *ie/ia* mutation

ie followed by a consonant(s) mutates to **ia** with the next syllable containing **ă**

adjectives	masc./fem.: <i>biet</i> poor (m., sg.) – <i>biată</i> poor (f., sg.), <i>fiert</i> boiled (m., sg.) – <i>fiartă</i> boiled (f., sg.)
verbs	indicative present: <i>a ierta</i> to forgive: <i>eu iert – el iartă</i> , <i>a zbiera</i> to roar: <i>eu zbier – el zbiară</i> subjunctive present: <i>a pieri</i> to perish: <i>eu să pier – el să piară</i>

2.2.1.9. *â/i* mutation

â followed by a consonant(s) mutates to **i** with the next syllable containing **e** or **i**

nouns	sing./pl.: <i>cuvânt</i> word – <i>cuvinte</i> , <i>vână</i> vein – <i>vine</i>
-------	---

2.2.1.10. *a/ă* mutation

a (stressed) mutates to **ă** (unstressed)

verbs	indicative present: <i>a căuta</i> to look for: <i>eu caut – noi căutăm</i> , <i>a tăcea</i> to be silent: <i>eu tac – voi tăceți</i> subjunctive present: <i>a căuta</i> to look for: <i>eu să caut – voi să căutați</i> , <i>a tăcea</i> to be silent: <i>eu să tac – voi să tăceți</i> imperative: <i>a căuta</i> to look for: <i>caută!</i> – <i>căutați!</i> , <i>a tăcea</i> to shut up: <i>taci!</i> – <i>tăceți!</i>
derivation	<i>țară</i> country – <i>țăran</i> peasant

2.2.1.11. *u/o* mutation

u (unstressed) mutates to **o** (stressed)

verbs	indicative present: <i>a juca</i> to play a game: <i>eu joc – noi jucăm</i> , <i>a ruga</i> to ask: <i>eu rog – noi rugăm</i> subjunctive present: <i>a juca</i> to play a game: <i>eu să joc – noi să jucăm</i> , <i>a ruga</i> to ask: <i>eu să rog – noi să rugăm</i>
-------	---

2.2.2. Consonant mutations

Consonant mutations occur when some consonants or groups of consonants are followed by **e** or **i** [â], when forming the plural of the nouns (and some pronouns) and adjectives (pronominal included), and also in the conjugation of the verbs (in the indicative present, subjunctive present, and in the imperative).

2.2.2.1. *c/ce* or *ci* mutation

nouns	sing./pl.: <i>copac</i> tree – <i>copaci</i> , <i>capac</i> lid – <i>capace</i> , <i>cracă</i> branch – <i>crăci</i> , <i>bancă</i> bank – <i>bănci</i> , <i>nemțoaică</i> German woman – <i>nemțoaice</i>
adjectives	sing./pl.: <i>mic(ă)</i> small (sg.) – <i>mici</i> small (pl.), <i>sălbatic</i> wild (m., sg.) – <i>sălbatici</i> wild (m., pl.), <i>sălbatică</i> wild (f., sg.) – <i>sălbaticice</i> wild (f., pl.)
verbs	indicative present: <i>a face</i> to do, to make: <i>eu fac</i> – <i>tu faci</i> – <i>el face</i> – <i>noi facem</i> – <i>voi faceți</i> – <i>ei fac</i> , <i>a duce</i> to carry: <i>eu duc</i> – <i>tu duci</i> – <i>el duce</i> – <i>noi ducem</i> – <i>voi duceți</i> – <i>ei duc</i> subjunctive present: <i>a urca</i> to climb up: <i>eu să urc</i> – <i>tu să urci</i> – <i>el să urce</i> , <i>a juca</i> to play a game: <i>eu să joc</i> – <i>tu să joci</i> – <i>el să joace</i>
derivation	<i>sălbatic</i> wild – <i>sălbăticie</i> wildness

2.2.2.2. *g/ge* or *gi* mutation

nouns	sing./pl.: <i>fag</i> beech tree – <i>fagi</i> , <i>dungă</i> stripe – <i>dungi</i> , <i>pungă</i> bag – <i>pungi</i> , <i>slugă</i> servant – <i>slugi</i> , <i>catarg</i> mast – <i>catarge</i>
adjectives	sing./pl.: <i>drag</i> dear (m., sg.) – <i>dragi</i> dear (m., pl.), <i>larg</i> wide (m., sg.) – <i>largi</i> wide (pl.), <i>lung</i> long (m., sg.) – <i>lungi</i> long (pl.)
verbs	indicative present: <i>a trage</i> to pull: <i>eu trag</i> – <i>tu tragi</i> – <i>el trage</i> – <i>noi tragem</i> – <i>voi trageți</i> – <i>ei trag</i> , <i>a ajunge</i> to arrive: <i>eu ajung</i> – <i>tu ajungi</i> – <i>el ajunge</i> – <i>noi ajungem</i> – <i>voi ajungeți</i> – <i>ei ajung</i> subjunctive present: <i>a trage</i> to pull: <i>eu să trag</i> – <i>tu să tragi</i> – <i>el să tragă</i> – <i>noi să tragem</i> – <i>voi să trageți</i> – <i>ei să tragă</i>
derivation	<i>lung</i> long – <i>lungime</i> length

2.2.2.3. *s/ș* + *i* mutation

nouns	sing./pl.: <i>urs</i> bear – <i>urși</i> , <i>rus</i> Russian – <i>ruși</i>
adjectives	sing./pl.: <i>frumos</i> beautiful (m., sg.) – <i>frumoși</i> beautiful (m., pl.), <i>gras</i> fat (m., sg.) – <i>grasi</i> fat (m., pl.)
verbs	indicative present: <i>a miroși</i> to smell: <i>eu miroș</i> – <i>tu miroși</i> , <i>a lăsa</i> to let: <i>eu las</i> – <i>tu lași</i> subjunctive present: <i>a miroși</i> to smell: <i>eu să miroș</i> – <i>tu să miroși</i> , <i>a lăsa</i> to let: <i>eu să las</i> – <i>tu să lași</i>

2.2.2.4. *st/șt* + *i* mutation

nouns	sing./pl.: <i>artist</i> artist – <i>artiști</i> , <i>poveste</i> fairy tale – <i>povești</i>
adjectives	sing./pl.: <i>îngust</i> narrow (m., sg.) – <i>înguști</i> narrow (m., pl.), <i>prost</i> stupid (m., sg.) – <i>proști</i> stupid (m., pl.)
verbs	indicative present: <i>a asista</i> to assist: <i>eu asist</i> – <i>tu asیști</i> , <i>a gusta</i> to taste: <i>eu gust</i> – <i>tu guști</i> subjunctive present: <i>a asista</i> to assist: <i>eu să asist</i> – <i>tu să asیști</i> , <i>a gusta</i> to taste: <i>eu să gust</i> – <i>tu să guști</i>

2.2.2.5. *str/ștr + i* mutation

nouns	sing./pl.: <i>astru</i> star – <i>aștri</i> , <i>ministru</i> minister – <i>miniștri</i>
adjectives	sing./pl.: <i>albastru</i> blue (m., sg.) – <i>albaștri</i> blue (m., pl.), <i>ecvestru</i> equestrian (m., sg.) – <i>ecveștri</i> equestrian (m., pl.)
other	possessive pron./adj.: <i>al nostru</i> ours (m., sg.) – <i>ai noștri</i> ours (m., pl.), <i>al vostru</i> yours (m., sg.) – <i>ai voștri</i> yours (m., pl.)

2.2.2.6. *sc/șt + i* or *e* mutation

nouns	<i>broască</i> frog – <i>broaște</i> , <i>moluscă</i> mollusc – <i>moluște</i> , <i>cască</i> earphone – <i>căști</i>
adjectives	<i>românesc</i> Romanian (m., sg.) – <i>românești</i> Romanian (m., pl.), <i>chinezesc</i> Chinese (m., sg.) – <i>chinezești</i> Chinese (m., pl.)
verbs	indicative present: <i>a cunoaște</i> to know: <i>eu cunosc</i> – <i>tu cunoști</i> – <i>el cunoaște</i> , <i>a bănuî</i> to suspect: <i>eu bănuiesc</i> – <i>tu bănuiești</i> – <i>el bănuiește</i> subjunctive present: <i>a cunoaște</i> to know: <i>eu să cunosc</i> – <i>tu să cunoști</i> – <i>noi să cunoaștem</i> , <i>a privi</i> to watch: <i>eu să privesc</i> – <i>tu să privești</i>
derivation	<i>cunoscut</i> well-known – <i>cunoaștere</i> knowledge, <i>românesc</i> Romanian – <i>românește</i> in Romanian (adv.)

2.2.2.7. *șc/șt + e* or *i* mutation

nouns	sing./pl.: <i>cușcă</i> cage – <i>cuști</i> , <i>pușcă</i> rifle – <i>puști</i>
verbs	indicative present: <i>a mușca</i> to bite: <i>eu mușc</i> – <i>tu muști</i> , <i>a împușca</i> to shoot: <i>eu împușc</i> – <i>tu împuști</i> subjunctive present: <i>a mușca</i> to bite: <i>eu să mușc</i> – <i>tu să muști</i> , <i>a împușca</i> to shoot: <i>eu să împușc</i> – <i>tu să împuști</i>

2.2.2.8. *t/ț + i* or *e* mutation

nouns	sing./pl.: <i>bărbat</i> man – <i>bărbați</i> , <i>frate</i> brother – <i>frați</i> , <i>tată</i> father – <i>tați</i> , <i>cetate</i> fortress – <i>cetăți</i>
adjectives	sing./pl.: <i>atent</i> attentive (m., sg.) – <i>atenți</i> attentive (m., pl.), <i>cult</i> cultured (m., sg.) – <i>culți</i> cultured (m., pl.), <i>direct</i> straight (m., sg.) – <i>directi</i> straight (m., pl.)
verbs	indicative present: <i>a cânta</i> to sing: <i>eu cânt</i> – <i>tu cânți</i> , <i>a bate</i> to beat: <i>eu bat</i> – <i>tu bați</i> subjunctive present: <i>a cânta</i> to sing: <i>eu să cânt</i> – <i>tu să cânți</i> , <i>a bate</i> to beat: <i>eu să bat</i> – <i>tu să bați</i>
derivation	<i>bărbat</i> man – <i>bărbăție</i> manhood, <i>atent</i> attentive – <i>atenție</i> attention, <i>frate</i> brother – <i>frățeste</i> brotherly, <i>cetate</i> fortress, city – <i>cetățean</i> citizen

2.2.2.9. *d/z + i/â or ă* mutation

nouns	sing./pl.: <i>brad</i> fir tree – <i>brazi</i> , <i>ladă</i> box – <i>lăzi</i>
adjectives	sing./pl.: <i>verde</i> green (sg.) – <i>verzi</i> green (pl.), <i>blând</i> kind (m., sg.) – <i>blânzi</i> kind (m., pl.)
verbs	indicative present: <i>a cădea</i> to fall: <i>eu cad – tu cazî</i> , <i>a închide</i> to close: <i>eu închid – tu închizi</i> subjunctive present: <i>a cădea</i> to fall: <i>eu să cad – tu să cazî</i> , <i>a deschide</i> to open: <i>eu să deschid – tu să deschizi</i> in the gerund: <i>a deschide</i> to open – <i>deschizând</i> opening, <i>a cădea</i> to fall – <i>căzând</i> falling
derivation	<i>a deschide</i> to open – <i>deschizătură</i> opening (noun)

2.2.2.10. *z/j + i* mutation

nouns	sing./pl.: <i>obraz</i> cheek – <i>obraji</i> , <i>cneaz</i> prince – <i>cneji</i>
adjectives	sing./pl.: <i>viteaz</i> brave (m., sg.) – <i>viteji</i> brave (m., pl.), <i>treaz</i> awake (m., sg.) – <i>treji</i> awake (m., pl.)
derivation	<i>viteaz</i> brave – <i>vitejie</i> braveness

2.2.2.11. *l/ø + i* mutation

nouns	sing./pl.: <i>cal</i> horse – <i>cai</i> , <i>cale</i> way – <i>căi</i>
adjectives	sing./pl.: <i>moale</i> soft (sg.) – <i>moi</i> soft (pl.), <i>gol</i> empty (m., sg.) – <i>goi</i> empty (m., pl.)

2.2.2.12. *n/ø + i* mutation

verbs	indicative present: <i>a pune</i> to put: <i>eu pun – tu pui</i> , <i>a rămâne</i> to stay: <i>eu rămân – tu rămâi</i> , <i>a veni</i> to come: <i>eu vin – tu vii</i> subjunctive present: <i>a pune</i> to put: <i>eu să pun – tu să pui</i> , <i>a rămâne</i> to stay: <i>eu să rămân – tu să rămâi</i> , <i>a veni</i> to come: <i>eu să vin – tu să vii</i>
-------	---

3. NOMINALS

3.1. Noun

3.1.1. The gender of nouns in the singular

Romanian, as any inflective language, is governed by nominal agreement: the forms of different modifiers (adjectives, pronominal adjectives, ordinal numerals) depend on the gender and number of the noun.

Recognizing the gender of Romanian nouns can be difficult for several reasons:

1. Romanian is the only Romance language that preserved three genders from the Latin: masculine, feminine, and neuter. Some of the Romanian neuter nouns are inherited from Latin: *cap* – *capete* head < lat. *caput*; *ou* – *ouă* egg < lat. *ovus*, etc. Numerous lexical borrowings from different languages have enriched the group of neuter nouns: *sfat* – *sfaturi* advice, *val* – *valuri* wave (slav.), *pahar* – *pahare* glass (hung.), *geam* – *geamuri* window glass (turk.), *scop* – *scopuri* goal (neo-gr.), *aparăt* – *aparate* apparatus (germ.), *computer* – *computere* computer (engl.), *fenomen* – *fenomene* phenomenon (fr.), etc. The distinctive part of the neuter gender in Romanian is that it does not have any formal particularities. The neuter nouns in the singular look like masculine nouns, while in the plural they look like feminine nouns. The same applies to adjectives, pronouns and pronominal adjectives. When they modify or replace a neuter noun in the singular they appear in their masculine singular form, and when they modify or substitute a neuter noun in the plural they appear in their feminine plural form.

2. The gender of many inanimate nouns is arbitrary in terms of extralinguistic categories. For instance, the following nouns belonging to the same thematic group, have different grammatical genders: *pantof* – *pantofi* shoe is masculine, *palton* – *paltoane* winter coat is neuter, and *fustă* – *fuste* skirt is feminine.

3. The dictionary form of a noun (i.e. the nominative sing. form) does not help much in recognizing its gender since there are no formal markers that can indicate without ambiguity the gender of a noun.

3.1.1.1. Assigning gender

There are several ways of establishing the gender of an independent noun in Romanian.

3.1.1.1.1. Noun ending

- all native nouns ending in a **consonant** or **-u** are masculine or neuter; however, some borrowed proper names or diminutives in a **consonant** or **-u** are feminine: *Carmen*, *Irinel*, *Lulu*
- most nouns ending in **-e** are feminine (specific suffixes, such as **-toare**, **-oare**, **-are**, **-ere**, **-ire**, etc. also help to distinguish the feminine from the masculine), but a small number are masculine and a few are neuter
- all nouns ending in **-ă**, **-a** (stressed), **-ea/-ia** (stressed) are feminine; however, there are some nouns designating male persons that are masculine although their ending is **-ă**: *tată* father, *popă* priest, *Papă* Pope
- nouns ending in **-i** can be masculine, neuter or feminine
- all feminine nouns end in a vowel (**-ă**, **-a**, **-e**, **-i**)
- there are some borrowed nouns in Romanian with non-typical endings, such as **-o**: *radio* radio, *flamingo* flamingo, *canto* bel canto. These nouns are neuter if they do not designate animate objects. When such a noun designates an animate object, its grammatical gender is determined by the natural gender of its designate.

masculine	neuter	feminine
consonant		-ă
<p><i>bărbat</i> man, <i>copil</i> child, <i>copac</i> tree, <i>pantof</i> shoe</p> <p>-or/-tor: <i>profesor</i> teacher, <i>scriitor</i> writer</p> <p>-ar: <i>pescar</i> fisherman, <i>veterinar</i> veterinarian</p> <p>-er: <i>chelner</i> waiter, <i>frizer</i> hairdresser</p> <p>-ic: <i>paznic</i> guard</p> <p>-ist: <i>ziarist</i> journalist, <i>specialist</i> specialist</p> <p>-an/-ean: <i>țaran</i> peasant, <i>american</i> American, <i>pământean</i> earthman</p> <p>-ân: <i>român</i> Romanian, <i>păgân</i> pagan</p> <p>-ez: <i>francez</i> Frenchman, <i>japonez</i> Japanese</p>	<p><i>hotel</i> hotel, <i>loc</i> place, <i>institut</i> institute, <i>scaun</i> chair</p> <p>-ism: <i>capitalism</i> capitalism, <i>terorism</i> terrorism</p> <p>-ment/-mânt: <i>parlament</i> parliament, <i>recensământ</i> census</p> <p>-ut: <i>început</i> start</p> <p>-aj: <i>sondaj</i> poll, <i>etaj</i> floor</p>	<p><i>studentă</i> student, <i>casă</i> house, <i>mașină</i> car, <i>ușă</i> door</p> <p>-ară/oară: <i>secretară</i> assistant, <i>profesoară</i> teacher</p> <p>-iță: <i>chelneriță</i> waitress, <i>doctoriță</i> doctor</p> <p>-istă: <i>ziaristă</i> journalist, <i>specialistă</i> specialist</p> <p>-ancă/-eancă/-âncă: <i>țărancă</i> peasant woman, <i>americancă</i> American woman, <i>pământeană</i> earthwoman, <i>româncă</i> Romanian woman</p> <p>-ână: <i>păgână</i> pagan, <i>bătrână</i> old lady</p> <p>-eză: <i>japoneză</i> Japanese, <i>finlandeză</i> Finnish</p> <p>-(ez/-uz)oaică: <i>chinezoaică</i> Chinese, <i>frantuzoaică</i> French</p>
-u		-ă/-eă (-iă)
<p><i>ministru</i> minister, <i>codru</i> forrest, <i>metru</i> metre, <i>erou</i> hero, <i>fiu</i> son, <i>leu</i> lion</p>	<p><i>lucru</i> thing, <i>teatru</i> theatre, <i>tablou</i> painting, <i>birou</i> office, <i>fotoliu</i> armchair, <i>mileniu</i> millennium, <i>indiciu</i> sign, <i>sacrificiu</i> sacrifice</p>	<p><i>pijama</i> pajamas, <i>baclava</i> baklava, <i>cafea</i> coffee, <i>stea</i> star, <i>boia</i> chili powder</p>
-e		
<p><i>frate</i> brother, <i>iepure</i> rabbit, <i>perete</i> wall, <i>pepene</i> melon</p>	<p><i>nume</i> last name, <i>prenume</i> first name</p>	<p><i>carte</i> book, <i>poveste</i> story, <i>universitate</i> university</p> <p>-toare – <i>scriitoare</i> writer, <i>ascuțitoare</i> pencil sharpener</p> <p>-oare: <i>onoare</i> honor, <i>favoare</i> favor</p> <p>-are: <i>plecare</i> departure, <i>mâncare</i> food</p> <p>-ere: <i>durere</i> pain, <i>plăcere</i> pleasure</p> <p>-ire: <i>privire</i> look, <i>măhnire</i> sadness, <i>fericire</i> happiness</p> <p>-âre: <i>hotărâre</i> decision</p> <p>-iune: <i>națiune</i> nation, <i>misiune</i> mission</p> <p>-tate: <i>universitate</i> university, <i>greutate</i> difficulty</p> <p>-ie (hiatus) – <i>bucătărie</i> kitchen, <i>farfurie</i> plate</p> <p>-ie (diphthong) – <i>cheie</i> key, <i>baie</i> bathroom</p> <p>-ee: <i>idee</i> idea, <i>maree</i> tide, <i>alee</i> alley</p>
-i		
<p><i>unchi</i> uncle, <i>ochi</i> eye, <i>arici</i> hedgehog, <i>ardei</i> chili pepper, <i>pisoi</i> kitten</p>	<p><i>unghi</i> angle, <i>tramvai</i> tram, <i>ceai</i> tea, <i>ulei</i> oil, <i>cui</i> nail</p>	<p><i>zi</i> day, <i>marți</i> Tuesday, <i>tanti</i> aunt</p>

3.1.1.1.2. Lexical meaning

The following nouns are **masculine**:

- all proper or common nouns that designate male humans, male animals, and male birds
- all nouns indicating nationalities designating male persons
- all nouns indicating the profession of male persons
- names of trees: *plop* poplar tree, *castan* chestnut tree, *stejar* oak, *palmier* palm tree, *măr* apple tree, etc.; however, such names of trees like *salcie* willow, *magnolie* magnolia and some others are feminine
- names of mountain chains (plural only): *Carpați* Carpathians, *Balcani* Balkans, *Alpi* Alps, etc.
- the months of the year: *ianuarie* January, *februarie* February, *martie* March, etc.
- the letters of the alphabet, the musical notes, the figures: *a, be, ce, de*, etc.; *do, re, mi*, etc.; *doi* two, *trei* three, *patru* four, etc.

The following nouns are **feminine**:

- all proper and common nouns that designate female humans, female animals, and female birds
- all nouns indicating nationalities of female persons, formed by derivation from a masculine noun
- all nouns indicating the profession of female persons
- most names of countries: *Albania* Albania, *Bulgaria* Bulgaria, *Elveția* Switzerland, *Franța* France, *Germania* Germany, *Jordania* Jordan, *Olanda* Holland, *Polonia* Poland, *Rusia* Russia, *Suedia* Sweden, *Turcia* Turkey, *Ungaria* Hungary, etc. However, if the name of a country does not end in *-a*, it functions as a neuter: *Cipru* Cyprus, *Liban* Lebanon, *Maroc* Maroc, *Mexic* Mexico, *Vietnam* Vietnam, etc.
- the seasons of the year: *primăvară* spring, *vară* summer, *toamnă* fall, *iarnă* winter
- the days of the week: *luni* Monday, *marți* Tuesday, *miercuri* Wednesday, etc.
- most nouns designating fruits: *pară* pear, *portocală* orange, *banană* banana, *lămâie* lemon, etc.; there are, however, names of fruits that are masculine or neuter: *ananas* pineapple (m.), *măr* apple (n.), *mango* mango (n.), etc.

The following nouns are **neuter**:

- many nouns designating inanimate objects, but there are also numerous feminine inanimate objects, and some masculine
- some nouns designating parts of the human body: *cap* head, *nas* nose, *picior* leg, *cot* elbow *deget* finger, etc.; however, there are names of parts of human body that are masculine: *ochi* eye, *genunchi* knee, or feminine: *mână* hand, *gleznă* ankle

3.1.1.1.3. The 'one-two' test

This method requires the ability to form the plural of the nouns. Native speakers of Romanian often do this to determine the gender of an inanimate noun.

The numerals *un – o* one and *doi – două* two have masculine and feminine forms (*un* and *doi* are masculine, while *o* and *două* are feminine). The neuter nouns act as masculine in the singular and as feminine in the plural. Accordingly:

- if the masculine numerals *un – doi* go with the singular and the plural of a noun, the noun is masculine: *un bărbat – doi bărbați* man, *un copil – doi copii* child, *un pantof – doi pantofi* shoe, *un copac – doi copaci* tree, *un pepene – doi pepeni* watermelon, *un codru – doi codri* forest, *un ochi – doi ochi* eye, etc.
- if the feminine numerals *o – două* go with the singular and the plural of a noun, the noun is feminine: *o studentă – două studente* student (f.), *o plantă – două plante* plant, *o pijama – două pijamale* pajamas, *o cafea – două cafele* coffee, *o poveste – două povești* story, *o universitate – două universități* university, *o zi – două zile* day, etc.
- if the singular of a noun takes the masculine numeral *un*, and the plural takes the feminine numeral *două*, the noun is neuter: *un caiet – două caiete* notebook, *un hotel – două hoteluri* hotel, *un institut – două institute* institute,

un scaun – două scaune chair, *un etaj – două etaje* floor, *un teatru – două teatre* theater, *un nume – două nume* name, *un tramvai – două tramvaie* tram, etc.

3.1.2. Number

3.1.2.1. Forming the plural

The plural of nouns is formed by changing the ending of the noun through addition or substitution. There are not many nouns that form their plural by changing the ending only. Besides, in most instances, vowel or consonant mutations in the stem also occur. These morphophonemic alternations are often simple and easily identified: *student – studenți* student, *frate – frați* brother, *masă – mese* table. However, there are situations when the morphophonemic alternations make less transparent the relationship between the singular and the plural form of a noun: *mască – măști* mask, *baltă – bălți* pool, marsh.

On the other hand, some nouns similar in form (i.e. nouns with the same ending in the singular) have different plural forms, although they may belong to the same gender: *curcan – curcani* (m.) turkey, *ciocan – ciocane* (n.) hammer, *han – hanuri* (n.) inn, *pană – pene* (f.) feather, *cană – căni* (f.) mug.

Certain feminine, masculine and a few neuter nouns have identical singular and plural forms: *o învățătoare – două învățătoare* elementary school teacher (fem.), *o marți – două marți* Tuesday; *un ochi – doi ochi* eye, *un pui – doi pui* chicken; *un nume – două nume* name.

There are also some irregular plural forms: *om – oameni* man, human being, *soră – surori* sister, *zi – zile* day, *cap – capete* head, etc.

3.1.2.1.1. Masculine: *un – doi*

The plural of masculine nouns is formed as follows:

-cons.	-cons. + -i	<i>un elev – doi elevi</i> school student, <i>un scriitor – doi scriitori</i> writer, <i>un pom – doi pomi</i> tree, <i>un pantof – doi pantofi</i> shoe; <i>un student – doi studenți</i> student, <i>un specialist – doi specialiști</i> specialist, <i>un egiptean – doi egipteni</i> Egyptian, <i>un general – doi generali</i> general, <i>un spaniol – doi spanioli</i> Spanish man; <i>un copil – doi copii</i> child, <i>un cal – doi cai</i> horse, <i>un miel – doi miei</i> lamb, <i>un vițel – doi viței</i> calf, <i>un porumbel – doi porumbei</i> pigeon, dove
-u	-u → -i	<i>un metru – doi metri</i> meter, <i>un leu – doi lei</i> lion, <i>un fiu – doi fii</i> son, <i>un membru – doi membri</i> member; <i>un ministru – doi miniștri</i> minister
-e	-e → -i	<i>un iepure – doi iepuri</i> rabbit, <i>un pește – doi pești</i> fish, <i>un câine – doi câini</i> dog; <i>un frate – doi frați</i> brother, <i>un perete – doi pereți</i> wall
-i	-i = -i	<i>un unchi – doi unchi</i> uncle, <i>un ochi – doi ochi</i> eye
-ă	-ă → -i	<i>un tată – doi tați</i> father, <i>un popă – doi popi</i> priest

Exceptions: *un om – doi oameni* man, human being.

3.1.2.1.2. Feminine: *o – două*

The plural of feminine nouns is formed as follows:

-ă	-ă → -e	<i>o studentă – două studente</i> student, <i>o elevă – două eleve</i> school student, <i>o casă – două case</i> house; <i>o masă – două mese</i> table, <i>o englezoaică – două englezoaice</i> Englishwoman
	-ă → -i	<i>o ușă – două uși</i> door, <i>o mașină – două mașini</i> car; <i>o fabrică – două fabrici</i> factory, <i>o stradă – două străzi</i> street, <i>o seară – două seri</i> evening
	-ă → -uri	<i>o marfă – două mărfuri</i> merchandise, <i>o blană – două blănuri</i> fur
-e	-e → -i	<i>o lume – două lumi</i> world, <i>o pâine – două pâini</i> bread; <i>o curte – două curți</i> yard, <i>o noapte – două nopți</i> night, <i>o carte – două cărți</i> , <i>o mare – două mări</i> sea; <i>o idee – două idei</i> idea; <i>o cale – două căi</i> way, <i>o vale – două văi</i> valley, <i>o piele – două piei</i> skin, leather • -toare (inanimate, animals) → -tori : <i>o ascuțitoare – două ascuțitori</i> pencil sharpener, <i>o scrisoare – două scrisori</i> letter, <i>o ciocănitore – două ciocănitori</i> woodpecker; -toare (persons) = -toare : <i>o scriitoare – două scriitoare</i> writer, <i>o dansatoare – două dansatoare</i> dancer
-ie (after vowel)	-ie → -i	<i>o cheie – două chei</i> key; <i>o baie – două băi</i> bathroom, <i>o foaie – două foi</i> sheet of paper
-ie (after consonant)	-ie → -ii	<i>o bucătărie – două bucătării</i> kitchen, <i>o farfurie – două farfurii</i> plate
-a	-a + -le	<i>o sofa – două sofale</i> couch, <i>o pijama – două pijamale</i> pajamas
-ea	-ea → -ele	<i>o cafea – două cafele</i> , <i>o stea – două stele</i> star, <i>o șosea – două șosele</i> highway, <i>o măsea – două măsele</i> tooth
-i	-i = -i	<i>o marți – două marți</i> Tuesday, <i>o tanti – două tanti</i> aunt

Exceptions: *o soră – două surori* sister, *o noră – două nurori* daughter-in-law; *o mână - două mâini* hand, *o zi – două zile* day.

3.1.2.1.3. Neuter: *un - două*

The plural of feminine nouns is formed as follows:

-cons.	-cons. + -uri	<i>un tren – două trenuri</i> train, <i>un pat – două paturi</i> bed, <i>un loc – două locuri</i> place
	-cons. + -e	<i>un institut – două institute</i> institute, <i>un apartament – două apartamente</i> apartment, <i>un oraș – două orașe</i> city; <i>un capac – două capace</i> lid, <i>un picior – două picioare</i> leg
-u	-u → -uri	<i>un lucru – două lucruri</i> thing, <i>un tablou – două tablouri</i> painting, <i>un birou – două birouri</i> office
	-u → -e	<i>un muzeu – două muzee</i> museum, <i>un teatru – două teatre</i> theater
-iu	-iu → -ii	<i>un fotoliu – două fotolii</i> armchair, <i>un mileniu – două milenii</i> millennium, <i>un exercițiu – două exerciții</i> exercise, <i>un salariu – două salarii</i> salary
-i	-i+ -e	<i>un tramvai – două tramvaie</i> tram
	-i + -uri	<i>un taxi – două taxiuri</i> taxi
-e	-e = -e	<i>un nume – două nume</i> name

Exceptions: *un cap – două capete* head, *un râs – două râsete* laughter, *un ou – două ouă* egg, *un seminar – două seminarii* seminar, *un burghiu – două burghie* drill, *un sicriu – două sicrie* coffin, *un bisturiu – două bisturie* scalpel.

3.1.2.2. Plural endings

There are four plural endings for the nouns: *-i*, *-le/-ele*, *-e*, and *-uri*.

3.1.2.2.1. The ending *-i*

- *-i* is the most frequent plural ending in Romanian
- all masculine nouns end in *-i* in the plural
- certain feminine and neuter nouns end in *-i* in the plural
- the ending *-i* can be added to the final consonant of a singular noun (*profesor – profesori* professor), or it can replace the final vowel of a singular noun (*codru – codri* forrest, *perete – pereți* wall)
- phonetic mutations in the stem of the nouns that take the ending *-i* in the plural are very frequent
- the ending *-i* is to be pronounced as follows: **vowel i** [i] after **consonant + r / l** (*codri* forrests, *membri* members) or after **vowel** (*fotolii* armchairs); **short voiceless vowel i** [i̥] after **consonant** (*flori* flowers, *bătrâni* old men)

3.1.2.2.2. The ending *-le/-ele*

- this ending is used for feminine nouns (mostly borrowed from Turkish), ending in stressed *-a* and *-ea*
- the variant *-ele* replaces the ending *-ea* (*cafea – cafele* coffee)
- the variant *-le* is added to the nouns ending in *-a* (*baclava – baclavale* bakhlava)

3.1.2.2.3. The endings *-e* and *-uri*

These endings seem to be the most difficult in terms of learning Romanian as a foreign language, since they are used both for feminine and neuter nouns. However, since neuter and feminine nouns have identical plural forms, this should not be a problem for students: *o casă – două case* house (f.) and *un institut – două institute* institute (n.); *o marfă – două mărfuri* merchandise (f.), but *un hotel – două hoteluri* hotel (n.).

- the endings *-e* and *-uri* can be added to the final consonant of a noun in the singular (*bilet – bilete*, *tren – trenuri*), or it can replace the final vowel of a noun in the singular (*persoană – persoane*, *teatru – teatre*, *lucru – lucruri*)
- phonetic mutations sometimes occur in the stems of nouns that take the endings *-e* and *-uri*.

3.1.3. Case

There are five cases in Romanian: nominative, genitive, dative, accusative and vocative. The noun forms in the nominative and the accusative are identical (with few exceptions). The noun forms in the genitive and in the dative are also identical. The vocative has its own forms.

The nominative case is usually the case of the subject in a sentence (case questions: *cine? ce?*).

The accusative is the case of the direct object of the verb, but also the case of circumstantials or attributes built with various prepositions, such as : *în* in, *pe* on, *la* at, *cu* with, *lângă* near, *despre* about, *pentru* for, *fără* without, etc. (case questions: *pe cine? ce?*).

The dative is the case of the indirect object of the verb, and it shows the destination of giving (case question: *cui?*).

The genitive is, generally, the case indicating possession or belonging (case question: *al, a, ai, ale cui?*).

The vocative indicates the person to whom the speaker addresses, and the words in the vocative do not have a syntactic role in the sentence.

3.1.3.1. Case forms

If not modified by an adjective or pronominal adjective, the Romanian noun in the genitive or the dative will always be accompanied by its article, definite or indefinite. The element that changes in the genitive-dative forms is the article. It is only the feminine nouns that take a particular ending in the genitive-dative singular. This ending is identical in form to the ending for the nominative plural.

3.1.3.1.1. Declension with the indefinite article

singular			
	masculine	neuter	feminine
N.-A.	un pom	un scaun	o casă; o floare; o cafea
G.-D.	unui pom	unui scaun	unei case; unei flori; unei cafele
plural			
	masculine	neuter	feminine
N.-A.	niște pomi	niște scaune	niște case, niște flori; niște cafele
G.-D.	unor pomi	unor scaune	unor case, unor flori; unor cafele

- masculine and neuter nouns (not considering the article) have one form for the singular and one form for the plural in all cases
- feminine nouns (not considering the article) have one form for the nominative-accusative, and a different form for the genitive-dative singular and all the cases in the plural
- the indefinite article has three genitive-dative forms: **unui** (masculine and neuter, singular), **unei** (feminine, singular) and **unor** (plural for the three genders)

3.1.3.1.2. Declension with the definite article

singular			
	masculine	neuter	feminine
N.-A.	pomul	scaunul	casa ; floarea ; cafeaua
G.-D.	pomului	scaunului	casei ; florii ; cafelei
plural			
	masculine	neuter	feminine
N.-A.	pomi	scaunele	casele , florile ; cafelele
G.-D.	pomilor	scaunelor	caselor , florilor ; cafelelor

- masculine and neuter nouns (not considering the article) have one form for the singular and one form for the plural in all cases
- feminine nouns (not considering the article) have one form for the nominative-accusative, and a different form for the genitive-dative singular and all the cases in the plural. However, for the feminine nouns that take the ending **-ii** in the nominative-accusative plural (*stație – stații* station, *familie – familii* family, *bucătărie – bucătării* kitchen), the ending changes into **-ie** in the genitive-dative singular, and the article is attached to this form : *stație – stații – stației*, *familie – familii – familiei*, *bucătărie – bucătării – bucătăriei*
- the definite article has three genitive-dative forms: **-(u)lui** (masculine and neuter, singular), **-i** (feminine, singular) and **-lor** (plural for the three genders)

3.1.3.2. Accusative (direct object) with and without the preposition *pe*

The usage of the prepositional marker *pe* for the direct object is a specific feature of Romanian. The rules about when to use *pe* with the direct object are numerous and are insufficiently codified. In general, one can tell when *pe* should be used by taking into account a series of semantic (animate +/-, person +/-, definite +/-) and morphological attributes of the utterance.

3.1.3.2.1. The direct object with *pe*

The preposition *pe* is used when the direct object is:

- a common noun designating identified, definite or unique persons, as well as persons assumed to be known both by the speaker and the listener:
 - *O aștept pe mama.* I'm waiting for mom.
 - *Îl caut pe profesor.* I am looking for the professor (that particular professor we all know).
 - *Îl caut pe profesorul de matematică.* I'm looking for the math professor.
 - *Îl caut pe profesorul Gheorghiu.* I'm looking for professor Gheorghiu.
- a proper noun, the name of a person or of an animal:
 - L-am văzut aseară pe Radu.* I saw Radu last night.
 - *Îl plimbi tu pe Rex?* Will you walk Rex (dog name)?
- a common noun designating inanimate objects or animals that implies a metaphor for a person, or used in a complex comparison in which the first term is a person; names of toys that can be perceived as persons or pets (dolls, teddy-bears, etc.):
 - *L-ai auzit pe măgarul ăla de George care zice că nu știe de ce s-au despărțit Anca și Matei?! Did you hear that bastard (lit. donkey) George who says he doesn't know why Anca and Matei broke up?!*
 - A aruncat-o ca pe o măsea stricată.* He discarded her like a broken tooth.
 - *O iubești pe păpușă? Dar pe ursuleț?* Do you love the doll ? And the teddy-bear ?
- a common noun designating inanimate objects or animals in a construction in which the subject and the direct object are the same noun and they precede the predicate:
 - Cui pe cui se scoate.* Romanian proverb. Lit. A nail takes out a nail.
- a periphrastic nominal construction with the possessive (*al, a, ai, ale*) or demonstrative (*cel, cea, cei, cele*) article, that works as a substitute for nouns designating both persons and objects:
 - Prietenii de la Viena au venit, acum îi așteptăm pe cei de la Roma.* The friends from Vienna arrived, now we are waiting for those from Rome.
 - Am băgat în casă scaunele din curte, hai să le băgăm și pe cele de pe terasă.* I brought in the lounges from the courtyard, let's bring inside those on the terrace.
 - Prietenii mei au venit deja, acum îi așteptăm pe ai Alexandrei.* My friends arrived already, now we are waiting for Alexandra's (friends).
 - Eu mi-am găsit dicționarul, dar pe al Alexandrei nu îl văd nicăieri.* I found my dictionary, but I don't see Alexandra's (dictionary).

3.1.3.2.2. The direct object without *pe*

The preposition *pe* is not used when the direct object is:

- a common noun designating inanimate objects or animals, with or without definite or indefinite article, with or without modifiers (when the noun does not function as a metaphor designating persons, in which case it will be preceded by *pe*):
 - Am citit un articol.* I read an article.
 - Am citit un articol interesant despre originea limbii române.* I read an interesting article about the origins of the Romanian language.
 - Am citit articolul.* I read the article.
 - Am citit articolul despre originea limbii române.* I read the article about the origins of the Romanian language.
 - Am citit trei articole.* I read three articles.
 - Am citit cele trei articole recomandate de profesor.* I read the three articles recommended by the professor.
 - *Ai văzut măgarul? Ai văzut ce urechi mari are?* Did you see the donkey ? Did you see how big his ears are?
- a common noun designating unidentified persons, used as a generic term – categories of people (nationalities, professions), ideal, imaginary persons, as well as such a noun preceded by modifiers like *așa*, *atare*, *astfel de* such, such a:
 - Caut translator.* I am looking for an interpreter.
 - Caut un translator de limba portugheză.* I'm looking for a Portuguese language interpreter.
 - Încă mai caut profesorul ideal.* I'm still looking for the ideal teacher.
 - Îmi doresc să cunosc o fată frumoasă, înaltă, suplă, blondă și cu ochii verzi.* I wish I met a beautiful girl, tall, slim, blond, and with green eyes.
 - *Ai mai văzut așa un om?* Have you ever seen such a person ?
 - *Cine a mai cunoscut atare persoană?!* Who has ever met such a person ?!
- any common noun, including nouns designating persons, with the definite article when used in a construction with the possessive dative by the verb:
 - Îmi știe toate problemele.* He / she knows all my problems.
 - Îi cunosc rucele.* I know his / her relatives.
- a proper noun designating inanimate objects (countries, cities, mountains, rivers, etc.), that can generally take the definite article:
 - Iubesc Kenya.* I love Kenya.
 - Am admirat Dunărea de pe terasa hotelului.* I admired the Danube from the terrace of my hotel.
 - Visez Parisul zi și noapte.* I dream of Paris day and night.

3.1.3.3. The accusative with other prepositions

The nouns in the accusative can take different prepositions, including *pe*, in order to fulfill attributive or circumstantial functions : *pe* on, *în* in, *la* at, *din* from, *cu* with, *fără* without, *lângă* next to, *sub* under, *despre* about, etc.:

Cartea e pe masă. The book is on the table.

Ea lucrează la universitate. She works at the university.

Beau cafeaua fără zahăr și ceaiul cu multă lămâie. I drink my coffee with no sugar, and the tea with lots of lemon.

— *Vorbești despre Anton ?* Are you talking about Anton ?

3.1.3.4. Genitive and dative cases

In form the genitive and the dative are identical in Romanian. In the discourse they have different functions. There are some formal contextual elements that help identify the case.

3.1.3.4.1. Differentiating the genitive and dative

The genitive and the dative are required by a series of prepositions, verbs and adverbs.

3.1.3.4.1.1. The genitive

The genitive indicates possession, belonging or origin. The case question of the genitive is *al, a, ai, ale cui?* whose? In simple constructions or sentences, the noun in the genitive is placed after the noun that it modifies, in its immediate proximity: *cartea profesorului* professor's book; *mama Corinei* Corina's mother; *misterele Egiptului* mysteries of Egypt; *prietenii copiilor* children's friends; *acoperișurile caselor* the roofs of the houses, etc. In such simple combinations, the noun modified by the genitive takes the definite article.

If the modified noun takes the indefinite article, or if it is modified by one or more adjectives or by a noun in the accusative, the noun in the genitive will take the possessive or genitival article: *o carte a profesorului* a book of the professor's, *cartea nouă a profesorului* the new professor's book ; *mama minunată a Corinei* the wonderful mother of Corina; *misterele fermecătoare ale Egiptului* the enchanting mysteries of Egypt; *prietenii de la grădiniță ai copiilor* children's friends from the kindergarten; *acoperișurile de tablă ale caselor* the tin roofs of the houses, etc.

The genitive case is required by many prepositions, such as:

asupra about, regarding: *Discuția asupra metodelor de evaluare a durat două ore.* The discussion regarding the evaluation methods lasted for 2 hours.

contra against: *Argumentele contra poziției mele nu au fost convingătoare.* The arguments against my position were not convincing.

deasupra / pe deasupra over: *Zborul deasupra / pe deasupra oceanului este fascinant.* The flight over the ocean is fascinating.

înaintea / dinaintea / de dinaintea before: *E liniștea dinaintea furtunii.* This is the calm before the storm.

înapoia / dinapoia / de dinapoia behind: *Curtea dinapoia casei e mică.* The yard behind the house is small.

în fața in front of: — *Suntem în fața Ateneului Român.* We are in front of the Romanian Atheneum.

din fața in front of: — *Tânărul din fața doamnei Alexandrescu este fiul ei?* The young man in front of Mrs. Andrescu is her son ?

în spatele behind: — *Anton e tânărul care stă în spatele Mariei.* Anton is the young man who is standing behind Maria.

din spatele behind: — *Cred că îl cunosc pe tipul din spatele Mariei.* I think I know the young man behind Maria.

de-a lungul along, in: — *Am mers de-a lungul râului.* We walked along the river.

de-a latul across: — *De ce stai așa, de-a latul patului?* Why are you laying like this, across the bed ?

pe dinăuntru inside: *Pe dinăuntru sufletului meu sunt cam tristă.* Deep inside I am pretty sad.

pe dinafara out of: *Pare bine informat, însă este total pe dinafara problemelor.* He seems well informed, but in reality he is out of picture.

împrejurul around: *Nu este decât pădure împrejurul caselor, altceva nimic.* There isn't anything but forest around the houses.

în jurul around: *Am dat ture vreo 10 minute în jurul statuii până au venit și ei.* We walked around the statue until they arrived.

din jurul around: *Gardul din jurul grădinii nu e prea înalt.* The fence around the garden is not too high.

în timpul during: *Tinerii aceia au vorbit încontinuu între ei în timpul conferinței.* Those young people kept talking amongst themselves during the conference.

din timpul during: *La o conferință discuțiile din timpul pauzelor sunt cele mai interesante.* In a conference, the discussions during the breaks are the most interesting.

în cursul in, during: — *În cursul discuției ați omis un argument important!* You have omitted an important argument during the discussion.

din cursul during, in: *Cearța din cursul serii m-a întristat.* The fight we had in the evening made me feel sad.

în decursul along , in, during: *În decursul anilor am învățat engleza destul de bine.* I've learned English fairly well throughout the years.

la începutul at the beginning: *La începutul recitalului nu a cântat prea bine.* He did not play too well at the beginning of the recital.

de la începutul in the beginning: *Sonata de la începutul recitalului a fost plicticoasă.* The sonata in the beginning of the recital was boring.

la sfârșitul at the end: *A cântat superb la sfârșitul recitalului.* She sang beautifully at the end of the recital.

de la sfârșitul in the end: *Liedul de la sfârșitul recitalului a fost minunat.* The song at the end of the recital was wonderful.

la mijlocul at the middle: *Am găsit informația necesară abia la mijlocul articolului.* I found the necessary piece of information only at the middle of the article.

de la mijlocul in the middle: *Scena de la mijlocul actului întâi m-a impresionat.* The scene in the middle of the 1st act impressed me.

în mijlocul in the middle: — *De ce stai în mijlocul străzii – e periculos!* Why are you standing in the middle of the street ? It's dangerous !

din mijlocul in the middle: *Statuia din mijlocul parcului este teribil de urâtă!* The statue in the middle of the park is terribly ugly.

din cauza because of: *A pierdut totul din cauza propriei iresponsabilități.* He lost everything because of his own irresponsibility.

în vederea for, to: *Am făcut diverse lucruri utile în vederea plecării.* I did many useful things preparing for the departure.

în privința regarding, related to: — *Stai liniștit în privința banilor: totul va fi bine.* Don't worry about money, everything will be fine.

cu ocazia on, for (an event): — *Cu ocazia Crăciunului vă dorim fericire și sănătate!* We wish you happiness and health on the occasion of this Christmas.

în fruntea as a leader: — *Pe cine au ales în fruntea partidului?* Whom did they choose as the leader of the party?

din fruntea who is a leader of: *Politicianul din fruntea partidului este foarte tânăr!* The politician who leads the party is very young.

în urma after, as a consequence of: *În urma discuției am decis: rămân în București.* After the discussion I made my mind : I will stay in Bucharest.

în locul instead: *Profesorul Popovici a vorbit în locul profesorului Berg.* Professor Popovici spoke in place of professor Berg.

în numele on behalf of: — *Iau cuvântul în numele colegilor mei.* I am taking the floor on behalf of my colleagues.

3.1.3.4.1.2. The dative

The dative indicates the person or thing the action of the verb is directed to. The case question of the dative is **cui?** to whom?

The dative comes after certain verbs related to the general idea of 'giving':

a da to give: — *I-am dat kolegei tale cărțile de spaniolă.* I gave your colleague the Spanish textbooks.

a oferi to offer: *Azi le ofer prietenilor daruri.* I'm offering gifts to my friends today.

a înmâna to hand in: *Decanul le-a înmânat diplomele studenților.* The dean handed in the diplomas to the students.

a dăru to give (a gift): *Îi dăruiește prietenei sale lucruri foarte scumpe.* He gives his girlfriend very expensive things.

a spune to tell, to say: *Le-am spus studenților că examenul va fi greu.* I told the students that the exam would be difficult.

a explica to explain: *Le-a explicat studenților ce au de făcut.* He explained to the students what they have to do.

a promite to promise: *I-am promis mamei că voi telefona zilnic.* I promised my mother that I would call every day.

a arăta to show: *Le-am arătat oaspeților pe ce stradă este muzeul.* I showed the guests what street the museum is on.

The dative case is required by the prepositions with the general meaning 'thanks to':

datorită: *Am obținut aceste rezultate datorită ajutorului tău.* I got these results thanks to your help.

grație: *Am ajuns acasa mai devreme grație bunăvoinței dumneavoastră.* I got home earlier thanks to your kindness.

mulțumită: *Mulțumită eforturilor voastre am ocupat locul întâi.* We won the first place thanks to your efforts.

The dative is also required by some adjectives and comparative adverbs:

folositor useful to: — *Obiectul acesta îi este folositor medicului?* Is this object useful to the doctor ?

util useful to: *Dicționarele noi le sunt foarte utile studenților care studiază româna.* The new dictionaries are very useful to those students who study Romanian.

asemenea like, alike: — *Comportamentul tău e asemenea comportamentului unui copil de cinci ani!* Your behavior is like the behavior of a 5-year-old.

conform according to: *Acționăm conform planului inițial.* We are going to proceed according to the initial plan.

3.1.3.4.2. Proper names of persons in the genitive-dative

The names of persons have some particular features in declension. They are very rarely declined with an indefinite article.

The feminine first names that end in **-a** (including foreign names) are declined like the common nouns with definite article (N.–A. *Maria*, G.–D. *Mariei*):

Maria (nominative) *are un frate.* Maria has a brother.

Stau de vorbă cu Maria (accusative). I'm speaking with Maria.

El este fratele Mariei (genitive). He is Maria's brother.

I-am dat Mariei (dative) *toate cărțile mele de română.* I gave Maria all my Romanian textbooks.

The genitive-dative of the feminine first names in **-ca** will have the ending **-căi**: *Ilinca – Ilincăi, Rodica – Rodicăi, Anca – Ancăi, Florica – Floricăi*, etc.

To form the genitive-dative of all masculine first names and of the feminine first names ending in **consonant, -i, -u**, etc., the definite article **lui** must be placed before the noun: *lui Ion, lui Vasile, lui Alexandru, lui Mircea, lui Luca* (masculine), *lui Carmen, lui Mimi, lui Irinel, lui John, lui Alice, lui Milagros*, etc.:

Alexandru (nominative) *are o soră.* Alexandru has a sister.

Stau de vorbă cu Alexandru. (accusative). I'm speaking with Alexandru.

Ea este sora lui Alexandru. (genitive). She is Alexandru's sister.

I-am dat lui Alexandru (dative) *toate cărțile mele de română.* I gave Alexandru all my Romanian textbooks.

Last names form the genitive-dative with the article **lui**, too: *lui Ionescu, lui Popescu, lui Cojocaru, lui Moraru, lui Popovici*, etc. Very often last names are preceded by common nouns: *domnul, doamna, domnișoara, studentul, elevul*, etc. When the combination is in genitive-dative, the common noun is the one that changes according to the general rule of declension with the definite article: *domnului Popescu, doamnei Georgescu, domnișoarei Olteanu, studentului Popa, elevei Cristea*, etc.

3.1.3.5 Vocative

The vocative can be identical in form with the nominative-accusative, or it can take special case endings. The general tendency in contemporary Romanian is not to use the special endings, i.e. to use the nominative case forms instead of the vocative case forms. Intonation is the most important means to convey the idea of addressing or calling somebody.

3.1.3.5.1. Forming the vocative

The endings of the vocative are:

singular	
masculine	feminine
-cons. + -e <i>băiat – băiete!</i> boy <i>prieten – prietene!</i> friend <i>Dan – Dane!</i>	-ă, -a, → -o <i>soră – soro!</i> sister <i>fată – fato!</i> girl <i>iubită – iubito!</i> honey
-u + -le <i>fiu – fiule!</i> son <i>erou – eroule!</i> hero <i>Radu – Radule!</i>	-e + -o <i>Florica – Florico!</i> <i>Elena – Eleno!</i>
-cons., -i + -ule <i>domn – domnule!</i> sir <i>unchi – unchiule!</i> uncle	-e + -o <i>vrăjitoare – vrăjitoareo!</i> witch
plural	
masculine and feminine	
-lor	
<i>domni – domnilor!</i> gentlemen <i>frați – fraților!</i> brothers <i>eroi – eroilor!</i> heroes	<i>doamne – doamnelor!</i> ladies <i>fete – fetelor!</i> girls <i>vrăjitoare – vrăjitoarelor!</i> witches

- the masculine nouns ending in **-e** do not have a separate ending for the vocative: *frate – frate!* brother, *George – George!*
- there are no fixed rules for the use of the endings, some masculine nouns ending in consonant accept both the ending **-e** and **-ule**: *băiat – băiete!* and *băiatule!* boy, *iubit – iubitul!* and *iubite!* honey (m.)
- some nouns that are frequently used in the vocative always take the special vocative endings: *domnule!* sir!, *fiule!*, son! *omule!* man!, *prietene!* friend!, *unchiule!* uncle!, *vere!* cousin!, *bunico!* grandma!, *bunicule!* grandpa!, *fetelor!* girls!, *fraților!* brothers, folks!, *doamnelor și domnilor!* ladies and gentlemen!, *doctore!* doctor!, *tinere!* young man!, *iubitule!* / *dragule!* honey! (m.), *iubito!* honey! (f.), *prostule!* you stupid! (m.), *proasto!* you stupid! (f.), *deșteptule!* you smart one! (m., iron.), *deștepto!* you smart one! (f., iron.)
- some nouns frequently used in the vocative never take the special endings: *mamă!* mother!, *tată!* father!, *copii!* children!, *băieți!* boys!, *prieteni!* friends!, *doamnă!* madam, ma'am!, *femeie!* woman!

The nouns in the vocative can be preceded by specific interjections that introduce the vocative forms, such as *măi*, *mă*, *bre*, *hei*:

- *Măi, Ioane, mă auzi?* Hey, Ion, do you hear me ?
- *Vino, mă, vere, încoace!* Come here, dude !
- *Haide, bre, unchiule, intră!* Hey, uncle, come on in !
- *Hei, omule, așteaptă-mă!* Hey, man, wait up !

3.1.3.5.2. Usage of the vocative

In direct address, both in letters and in public speaking, the noun in the vocative is frequently preceded by certain adjectives, such as: *drag* dear, *iubit* beloved, *scump* precious, dearest, *stimat* respected, dear. The noun in the vocative can be used in a simple structure **adjective + noun**, or in complex structures with **possessive adjectives** added.

3.1.3.5.2.1. Adjective + noun in the vocative

masculine, singular	
<i>dragă</i>	<i>dragă prietene, dragă domnule, dragă unchiule, dragă frate, dragă Bogdan, dragă Radu</i>
<i>iubite</i> + noun without article	<i>iubite prieten, iubite frate, iubite unchi / unchiule</i>
<i>scumpe</i>	<i>scumpe prieten</i>
<i>stimate</i>	<i>stimate domn / domnule, stimate prieten</i>
feminine, singular	
<i>dragă</i>	<i>dragă prietenă, dragă doamnă, dragă soră, dragă mătușă, dragă Maria, dragă Roxana</i>
<i>iubită</i> + noun without article	<i>iubită prietenă, iubită soră, iubită mătușă</i>
<i>scumpă</i>	<i>scumpă prietenă, scumpă doamnă</i>
<i>stimate</i>	<i>stimate doamnă, stimate prietenă</i>
masculine, plural	
<i>dragi</i>	<i>dragi prieteni, dragi invitați</i>
<i>iubiți</i> + noun without article	<i>iubiți prieteni</i>
<i>scumpi</i>	<i>scumpi prieteni</i>
<i>stimați</i>	<i>stimați oaspeți, stimați invitați</i>
feminine, plural	
<i>dragi</i>	<i>dragi prietene</i>
<i>iubite</i> + noun without article	<i>iubite verișoare</i>
<i>scumpe</i>	<i>scumpe doamne</i>
<i>stimate</i>	<i>stimate doamne</i>

- the nouns that are used in such structures are proper nouns, as well as such common nouns as: *prieten / prietenă* friend, *domn* mister, sir, *doamnă* mrs., madam, nouns indicating family, *oaspeți* guests, *invitați* guests, *participanți* participants, etc.
- when the adjectives *iubit*, *scump*, and *stimat* precede **masculine** nouns in the singular, they take the vocative ending **-e**
- the adjectives *drag* has in this combination two forms: one for the singular (both genders) – *dragă*, and a second one for the plural (both genders) – *dragi*
- the nouns following the adjectives can be used with or without the vocative endings (the most common combinations are given in the table above)

The adjectives *drag*, *iubit*, *scump* can also come after the noun, in which situation their nominative case forms are used. The nouns can be used with or without the vocative ending: *prietene drag*, *doamnă dragă*, *copii iubiți*, etc.

3.1.3.5.2.2. Adjective + possessive + noun in the vocative

masculine, singular	
<u>dragul</u> <u>iubitul</u> + <i>meu / nostru</i> + noun without article <u>scumpul</u> <u>stimatul</u>	<i>dragul meu prieten, dragul meu frate, dragul nostru unchi, dragul meu Radu</i> <i>iubitul meu prieten, iubitul nostru frate</i> <i>scumpul meu prieten, scumpul nostru văr</i> <i>stimatul meu prieten</i>
feminine, singular	
<u>draga</u> <u>iubita</u> + <i>mea / noastră</i> + noun without article <u>scumpa</u> <u>stimata</u>	<i>draga mea prietenă, draga mea soră, draga noastră mătușă, draga mea Maria</i> <i>iubita mea prietenă, iubita noastră soră</i> <i>scumpa mea prietenă</i> <i>stimata noastră prietenă</i>
masculine, plural	
<u>dragii</u> <u>iubiții</u> + <i>mei / noștri</i> + noun without article <u>scumpii</u> <u>stimații</u>	<i>dragii mei prieteni, dragii noștri invitați</i> <i>iubiții noștri prieteni, iubiții mei colegi</i> <i>scumpii noștri prieteni</i> <i>stimații noștri oaspeți</i>
feminine, plural	
<u>dragile / dragele</u> <u>iubitele</u> + <i>mele / noastre</i> + noun without article <u>scumpele</u> <u>stimatele</u>	<i>dragele mele prietene, dragele noastre verișoare</i> <i>iubitele noastre verișoare, iubitele mele Iulia și Monica</i> <i>scumpele mele prietene</i> <i>stimatele noastre invitate</i>

- within this structure the adjectives *drag*, *iubit*, *scump*, *stimat* are used with the definite article
- the noun does not take the vocative endings
- when it takes the definite article, the adjective *drag* in the feminine plural may also take the ending *-e*: *dragele* (although according to normative Romanian grammars the form *dragile* is the correct one, the form *dragele* is practically the one preferred in contemporary Romanian)
- the noun is often omitted : *dragul meu*, *scumpa mea*, *dragii noștri*, etc.

3.2. Article

3.2.1. The definite and indefinite article

3.2.1.1 The indefinite and definite article in the singular

3.2.1.1.1. Indefinite article

The indefinite article is a proclitic article. It always precedes the noun and is written as a separate word:

singular		
masculine and neuter		feminine
un		o
<i>un student</i> a student	<i>un scaun</i> a chair	<i>o studentă</i> a student
<i>un american</i> an American	<i>un dicționar</i> a dictionary	<i>o universitate</i> a university
<i>un perete</i> a wall	<i>un pix</i> a pen	<i>o zi</i> a day

- nouns used with the article *o* are feminine
- nouns used with the article *un* are either masculine or neuter

3.2.1.1.2. Definite article

The definite article is post-positioned (enclitic) in Romanian, which is unique among Romance languages. The same feature is found in other Balkan languages. The definite article is attached to the noun by addition (it can be added to the noun after its actual ending) or substitution (it can replace the actual ending of the noun). The noun and the definite article form a phonetic and graphic unit:

singular		
masculine and neuter		feminine
-l [-ul], -le		-a [-ua]
-cons.+ul: <i>student</i> – <i>studentul</i> student, <i>bărbat</i> – <i>bărbatul</i> man	-cons.+ul: <i>manual</i> – <i>manualul</i> textbook, <i>dicționar</i> – <i>dicționarul</i> dictionary	-ă→a: <i>studentă</i> – <i>studenta</i> student, <i>mașină</i> – <i>mașina</i> car
-i+ul: <i>ochi</i> – <i>ochiul</i> eye	-i+ul: <i>tramvai</i> – <i>tramvaiul</i> tram	-e+a: <i>lege</i> – <i>legea</i> law, <i>mare</i> – <i>mare</i> sea
-u+l: <i>fiu</i> – <i>fiul</i> son	-u+l: <i>teatru</i> – <i>teatrul</i> theatre	-ie→ia: <i>femeie</i> – <i>femeia</i> woman, <i>bucătărie</i> – <i>bucătăria</i> kitchen
-e+le: <i>perete</i> – <i>peretele</i> wall	-e+le: <i>nume</i> – <i>numele</i> name	-a, -ea, -i+ua: <i>pijama</i> – <i>pijamaua</i> pajamas, <i>cafea</i> – <i>cafeaua</i> coffee, <i>zi</i> – <i>ziua</i> day

- the article *-l*, [-ul], *-le* is attached to masculine and neuter nouns as follows:
 - *-l* is attached to those ending in *-u*
 - *-ul* is attached to those ending in a consonant or *-i*
 - *-le* is attached to those ending in *-e*
- the article *-a* [-ua] is attached to feminine nouns through addition (*-a* after *-e*, *-ua* after *-a*, *-ea*, *-i*) or substitution (*-a* replaces *-ă* and *-e*)

There are several masculine nouns designating male persons that end in **-ă**. These nouns take the article **-a**, like the feminine nouns: *tată – tata, popă – popa*, etc.

The definite article **-l**, as well as the final **-l** in **-ul**, are often not pronounced in the spoken language

The feminine nouns in **-i** designating days of the week have the following forms with the definite article: *luni – luna, marți – marțea, miercuri – miercurea, vineri – vinerea*, but *joi – joia*.

The feminine noun *cacao* cocoa takes the definite article as follows : *cacao – cacaua*.

3.2.1.2. The indefinite and definite article in the plural

3.2.1.2.1. Indefinite article

There is only one indefinite article for the plural, used with nouns of all genders: *niște*.

plural		
masculine	neuter	feminine
niște		
<i>niște studenți</i> <i>niște elevi</i> <i>niște băieți</i>	<i>niște scaune</i> <i>niște sate</i> <i>niște discuri</i>	<i>niște studente</i> <i>niște eleve</i> <i>niște fete</i>

3.2.1.2.2. Definite article

There are two definite articles for the plural: the article **-i** is attached to the plural of the masculine nouns, the article **-le** is added to the plural of the feminine and neuter nouns.

plural	
masculine	feminine and neuter
-i	-le
plural + -i: <i>studenți – studenții</i> students, <i>pomi – pomii</i> trees, <i>ochi – ochii</i> eyes, <i>fii – fiii</i> sons, <i>pereți – pereții</i> walls	plural + -le: <i>studente – studentele</i> students, <i>mașini – mașinile</i> cars, <i>legi – legile</i> laws, <i>mări – mările</i> seas, <i>femei – femeile</i> women, <i>bucătării – bucătăriile</i> kitchens, <i>pijamae – pijamalele</i> pajamas, <i>cafele – cafelele</i> coffees, <i>zile – zilele</i> days <i>paturi – paturile</i> beds, <i>instrumente – instrumentele</i> instruments, <i>paie – paiele</i> straws, <i>teatre – teatrele</i> theaters, <i>nume – numele</i> names

3.2.1.3. Article usage and omission

The noun in Romanian can function without any article, with the indefinite article or with the definite article. As a general rule, like in English, the noun without article has a non-specific or definite signification, the noun with the indefinite article isolates an unspecified object or a group of objects among other similar, and the noun with the definite article marks a certain object that can be precisely specified both by the speaker and the listener, due to its high level of individualization. There are, however, some instances when the usage of the article differs from English. Here are some basic guidelines about when to use the article in Romanian:

The use of an article is required

1. When the noun preceded by the preposition **cu** with indicates the instrument or the association:
 — *De ce nu mănânci cu furculița / cu o furculiță?* — Why aren't you using the fork / a fork?
Sunt cu un prieten / cu mama. I'm with a friend / (my) mother.
2. When the noun is modified by an adjective, a pronominal adjective or a complex construction:
Cartea e pe masa mare. The book is on the big table.
Cartea e pe o masă mare. The book is on a big table.
Cartea e pe masa de lângă ușă. The book is on the table by the door.

The indefinite article is required

1. When the noun designating the nationality or the occupation of a person is modified by an adjective or a complex construction:
El este un tată bun. He is a good father.
Ei sunt niște americani adevărați. They are true Americans.
Ele sunt niște studențe excepționale. They are outstanding students.
Ei sunt niște studenți cu rezultate foarte bune. They are students with very good results.

The definite article is required

1. With nouns preceded by the preposition **cu** with, designating the means of transportation:
 — *Mergi cu trenul sau cu avionul?* — Are you travelling by train or by plane?
 NOTE: when the noun is modified, the indefinite article can also be used:
Iau un tren de dimineață. I'm taking a morning train.
2. With nouns designating family relations (*mama, tata, bunica, bunicul, sora, fratele*, etc.), with or without modifiers, when preceded by any preposition:
Florile sunt pentru mama. The flowers are for (your, our, etc.) mother.
Mă duc la bunica. I'm going to grandma's.
3. With nouns modified by a possessive adjective:
Prietenul meu este aici. My friend is here.
Frații tăi sunt acasă. Your brothers are at home.

The article is unnecessary

1. When the profession or nationality of a person is indicated. The indefinite article is not required when one refers to profession, rank, nationality, or any other status within a category:
El este student. He is a student.
Doamna Andreescu este profesoară. Mrs. Andreescu is a teacher.
Andrew este american. Andrew is an American.
Vlad este român. Vlad is a Romanian.
2. After a preposition, unless the noun is modified. However, the use of an article is required with nouns preceded by the preposition **cu** (with):
Cartea este pe masă. The book is on the table.
Mergem cu mașina. We are driving (lit. go by car).
 NOTE: The definite article can never be used with an independent noun preceded by a preposition (except **cu**). The indefinite article can be used with a noun preceded by a preposition when the intention is to isolate the designated object from other similar objects or to indicate a higher degree of non-specificity:
Cartea e pe masă. The book is on the table.
Cartea e pe o masă. The book is on a table.
Pisica este sub scaun. The cat is under the chair.
Pisica este sub un scaun. The cat is under a chair.
Mergem la teatru. We are going to the theater.
Mergem la un teatru. We are going to a theater.

3. When a noun designating a substance is preceded by the preposition **cu** in a construction that indicates the addition of that substance (to food, etc.):
ceai cu lămâie tea with lemon
pâine cu unt bread with butter
cafea cu zahăr coffee with sugar
4. When the noun is preceded by interrogative or indefinite pronominal adjectives (**ce, cât, atât, câtva**), with a direct object that indicates an indefinite quantity or when a noun is modified by adjectives indicating an indefinite quantity (**mult, puțin**, etc.):
Ce carte! What a book!
Cât timp avem? How much time do we have?
Ai tu atâtea dicționare? Do you have so many dictionaries?
Am pâine, brânză și vin. I have bread, cheese and wine.
Am câțiva colegi din Germania. I have several classmates from Germany.
Nu am multe pixuri. I don't have lots of pens.
5. The article is not required before a predicate noun indicating matter, as well as an individual or an object in opposition to another, hypothetical one:
E lemn, nu plastic. This is wood, not plastic.
Nu e fată, e băiat. It's not a girl, it's a boy.

3.2.2. The demonstrative or adjectival article

There is a demonstrative or adjectival article in Romanian, with the following forms:

	singular		plural	
	masculine and neuter	feminine	masculine	feminine and neuter
N.-A.	<i>cel</i>	<i>cea</i>	<i>cei</i>	<i>cele</i>
G.-D.	<i>celui</i>	<i>celeii</i>	<i>celor</i>	

The traditional grammars call this element an adjectival or demonstrative article. However, it functions rather like a morphological particle. This element is included in the structure of the relative superlative degree of adjectives and adverbs: *cel mai frumos, cea mai frumoasă, cei mai frumoși, cele mai frumoase* the most beautiful. This same particle functions as a support element for the ordinal numerals, especially in order to express the case functions: *cel de-al doilea* the second one, *celui de-al doilea* to the second one. The noun phrase formed by a cardinal numeral and a noun (the noun can be omitted if it has already been named) is also preceded by the particle *cel, cea, cei, cele* that has a function of identification and individualization of the noun phrase as a whole (in English such groups take the definite article):

— *Unde sunt cele trei scrisori despre care vorbești?* Where are the three letters you are talking about?

— *Au venit deja cele două?* Did those two come yet?

cele zece porunci the ten commandments

"Cei trei mușchetari" de Alexandre Dumas "The Three musketeers" by Alexandre Dumas

Semantically *cel, cea, cei, cele* is very close to the demonstrative pronoun *acel, aceea, acei, acele* that. It can function as a pronoun in that it can be a substitute for a noun. It can replace a noun previously expressed in a particular context and recalled with regard to a specific attribute, not necessarily expressed by an adjective. For example:

— *Unde mi-e rochia?* Where is my dress?

— *Care, cea neagră sau cea verde? Sau cea de catifea?* Which one, the black one or the green one? Or the velvet one?
 (*cea* functions as a substitute for the noun *rochia*, previously expressed in the speech act)

Also, it can replace a possible noun that is not included in the speech act but whose referent is assumed to be known to the listener in a particular situation:

— *Care produse sunt mai bune?* Which products are better?

— ***Cele organice, evident, adică cele fără nitrați!*** The organic ones, obviously, which means the ones grown without nitrates. (if we assume that the communication act implies seeing at least two types of vegetables, organic and conventional, *cele* functions as a substitute for the possible noun that designates the vegetables)

The pronominal function of *cel, cea, cei, cele* is obvious in sayings, fixed constructions or proverbs, where it refers to a person or thing accepted by convention to have a certain attribute:

Cel de Sus = Dumnezeu God

cel cu coarne = dracul devil

cea cu coasa = moartea death

Cel bogat face cum vrea, cel sărac face cum poate. Romanian proverb : The rich one does as he pleases, the poor one does as he can.

Cele rele să se spele, cele bune să se-adune. Romanian saying : May the bad things wash away, may the good things come to us.

The term “**adjectival article**” is used because this element often precedes an adjective. *Cel, cea, cei, cele* can precede an adjective that comes after a noun with a definite article in order to emphasize the adjective or to make the combination **noun + adjective** more specific. When the adjectival article precedes the adjective, the attribution is reinforced, a supplemental stress is apparent over the relation between the noun and its adjective, and the quality expressed by the adjective is perceived as very relevant. Compare:

Tânăra blondă din fața noastră este sora mea, iar tânăra brunetă este verișoara mea. The blond young lady in front of us is my sister, and the brunette young lady is my cousin.

Tânăra cea blondă din fața noastră este sora mea, iar tânăra cea brunetă este verișoara mea. The blond young lady in front of us is my sister, and the brunette young lady is my cousin.

The Romanian bynames of certain personalities associated with a special and permanent quality or feature that defines them as such are based on the structure above: ***Ștefan cel Mare*** Stephen the Great, ***Mircea cel Bătrân*** Mircea the Old, ***Petru cel Mare*** Peter the Great, ***Lucas Cranach cel Bătrân*** Lucas Cranach the Elder, etc. In English the adjective in these bynames takes the definite article. Note that not all equivalent Romanian names will have the adjectival article as a component: ***Vlad the Impaler*** is ***Vlad Țepeș***, ***Ralph the Black*** is ***Radu Negru*** (legendary founder of Walachia, 13th century), etc.

The reinforcing function of *cel, cea, cei, cele* is prominent in constructions where the noun is modified both by a descriptive adjective and a possessive one. In such constructions the adjectival article occurs frequently:

— ***La petrecere vine și prietena lui cea simpatică?*** Will his nice friend come to the party?

— ***Am folosit calculatorul tău cel nou.*** I used your new computer.

Although this article usually precedes adjectives, it would be more appropriate to call it **attributive** instead of adjectival, for it can also precede an attribute expressed by a noun in a non-nominative case, a more complex noun phrase, or even an attributive clause:

— ***S-a întors studenta ta?*** Is your student back?

— ***Care studentă?*** Which student?

— ***Cea cu părul lung și ochelari. Cea de anul trecut. Cea pe care am cunoscut-o anul trecut.*** The one with long hair and who wears glasses. The one from last year. The one I met last year.

The particle *cel, cea, cei, cele* is used in the case required by the context:

- accusative with various prepositions (direct object that includes *cel, cea, cei, cele* without a noun, take the preposition *pe*):

— ***Ai văzut-o azi pe studenta mea cea veselă?*** Have you seen my cheerful student?

— ***Da, era cu cea tristă de la chimie, care e prietena ei.*** Yeah, she was with the sad one that is majoring in chemistry, who is her friend.

— ***Ai cumpărat cele trei tablouri despre care vorbeai zilele trecute?*** Did you buy the three things you were talking about the other day?

— ***Da, le-a cumpărat pe cele trei și pe cele două despre care nu am avut timp să-ți povestesc!*** Yes, I've bought the three ones and two I haven't had time to tell you about.

- genitive (with or without genitival-possessive article):
 - *A cui este cartea asta? E cartea studentei mele celei vesele care stă mereu în rândul întâi?* Whose is this book? Is it the book of my cheerful student who always sits in the first row?
 - *Nu, asta e cartea celei triste care stă de obicei în rândul doi. E a celei triste, știu sigur!* No, this is the book of the sad one who usually is seated in the second row. It's the sad one's, I just know it!
 - *Unde sunt ramele celor trei tablouri?* Where are the frames of the three paintings?
- dative:
 - *I-ai dat dicționarul studentei mele celei vesele?* Did you give the dictionary to my cheerful student?
 - *Nu, i l-am dat celei triste, dar care lucrează mai mult și mai bine.* No, I gave it to the sad one, who works more and better.

3.2.3. The possessive or genitival article

The possessive or genitival article indicates the relation of possession. This article has four forms :

singular		plural	
masculine and neuter	feminine	masculine	feminine and neuter
<i>al</i>	<i>a</i>	<i>ai</i>	<i>ale</i>

This article is a constitutive element of the genitive case question (the interrogative pronoun *cine* in the genitive case, preceded by this particular article): *al cui ?* whose (for masculine and neuter nouns in the singular), *a cui ?* whose (for feminine nouns in the singular), *ai cui ?* whose (for masculine nouns in the plural), *ale cui ?* whose (for feminine and neuter nouns in the plural).

The possessive or genitival article can be used with a noun or a pronoun in the genitive, as long as the noun or the pronoun are used independently (used without the noun they modify, i.e. the noun showing the object possessed) or in a remote position (used at a certain distance from the noun they modify, having other elements inserted between the two nouns):

— *A cui este casa aceasta ?* Whose house is this (house)? — *A părintilor mei.* (It is) my parents' (house). (independent genitive)

Casa cea nouă și mare a părintilor mei este foarte frumoasă. The new big house belonging to my parents is very nice. (remote genitive)

The possessive or genitival article is also a structural element of the possessive pronouns and of the personal pronouns in the genitive (for the 3rd person): *al meu* mine, *al tău* yours, *al lui* his, *al ei* hers, *al nostru* ours, *al vostru* yours, *al lor* theirs.

The possessive or genitival article takes the gender and the number of the noun or the pronoun indicating the object owned :

computerul cel nou al fratelui meu my brother's new computer

casa cea nouă a părintilor mei my parents' new house

pantofii cei noi ai verișoarei mele my cousin's new shoes

cărțile cele noi ale profesorului meu my professor's new books

3.3. Adjective

3.3.1. Adjectival agreement

The descriptive adjective is usually placed after the noun it modifies. The adjectives always take the gender, number and case of the nouns they modify.

3.3.1.1. Forming the feminine and the plural of the adjectives

Most adjectives are variable. An adjective modifying a neuter noun is masculine in form in the singular, and feminine in the plural. The dictionary form of the adjective, i.e. the masculine singular nominative forms, ends in **consonant**, **-u**, **-e** or **-i**. The forms for the feminine and the plural can be constructed by changing the ending of the adjective through addition (+) or substitution (→). Phonetic mutations may occur in the feminine and plural forms.

3.3.1.2. Four-form adjectives

singular		plural	
masculine and neuter	feminine	masculine	feminine and neuter
-cons.	+ -ă	+ -i	+ -e
<i>bun</i> good <i>frumos</i> beautiful	<i>bună</i> <i>frumoasă</i>	<i>buni</i> <i>frumoși</i>	<i>bune</i> <i>frumoase</i>
-u	→ -ă	→ -i	→ -e
<i>mândru</i> proud <i>albastru</i> blue <i>continuu</i> continuous	<i>mândră</i> <i>albastră</i> <i>continuuă</i>	<i>mândri</i> <i>albaștri</i> <i>continui</i>	<i>mândre</i> <i>albastre</i> <i>continue</i>

- most Romanian adjectives have four forms
- the ending **-u** for the masculine singular occurs when the stem ends in **consonant + r** or **l** or in **-u**

There are some irregular four-form adjectives, such as: *greu*, *greă*, *grei*, *grele* heavy, difficult; *rău*, *rea*, *răi*, *rele* bad, evil.

3.3.1.3. Three-form adjectives

singular		plural	
masculine and neuter	feminine	masculine	feminine and neuter
-cons. (-c, -g)	+ -ă	+ -i	
<i>mic</i> small <i>larg</i> wide <i>românesc</i> Romanian	<i>mică</i> <i>largă</i> <i>românească</i>	<i>mici</i> <i>largi</i> <i>românești</i>	
-u (-iu)	→ -ie	→ -ii	
<i>roșu</i> red <i>viu</i> alive <i>auriu</i> golden (color)	<i>roșie</i> <i>vie</i> <i>aurie</i>	<i>roșii</i> <i>vii</i> <i>aurii</i>	
-tor	-toare	-tori	-toare
<i>fermecător</i> charming	<i>fermecătoare</i>	<i>fermecători</i>	<i>fermecătoare</i>

There are two groups of three-form adjectives:

1. masculine plural = feminine plural

- adjectives that end in **-c** or **-g** in the masculine singular:

băieți mici little boys, *fețițe mici* little girls

NOTE: some adjectives that end in **-c**, **-g** have four forms: *sărac*, *săracă*, *săraci*, *sărace* poor, *harnic*, *harnică*, *harnici*, *harnice* hard-working, *pribeag*, *pribeagă*, *pribeagi*, *pribege* wandering, rambling.

- adjectives that in **-esc** in the masculine singular: *omeneșc*, *omenească*, *omenești* human, *românesc*, *românească*, *românești* Romanian, etc.

pantofi românești Romanian shoes (m.), *cărți românești* Romanian books (f.)

- adjectives that end in **-iu** in the masculine singular: *auriu*, *aurie*, *aurii* golden:

pereți aurii golden walls (m.), *cupole aurii* golden cupolas (f.)

- the irregular adjective *nou*, *nouă*, *noi* new:

pantofi noi new shoes (m.), *case noi* new houses (f.)

2. feminine singular = feminine plural

- adjectives that end in **-tor** in the masculine singular:

o piatră strălucitoare a shining stone, *niște pietre strălucitoare* some shining stones

3.3.1.4. Two-form adjectives

singular		plural	
masculine and neuter	feminine	masculine	feminine and neuter
-e		→ -i	
<i>mare</i> big		<i>mari</i>	
<i>verde</i> green		<i>verzi</i>	
<i>dulce</i> sweet		<i>dulci</i>	
-i / -ui		→ -e / -uie	
<i>vechi</i> old	<i>veche</i>	<i>vechi</i>	
<i>gălbui</i> yellowish	<i>gălbuie</i>	<i>gălbui</i>	

There are two groups of two-form adjectives:

1. masculine singular = feminine singular and masculine plural = feminine plural

- adjectives that end in **-e** in the masculine singular:

pom mare big tree, *casă mare* big house and

pomi mari big trees, *case mari* big houses

2. masculine singular = masculine plural = feminine plural

- adjectives that end in **-i** in the masculine singular

prieten vechi old friend (m.), *prietenă veche* old friend (f.),

prieteni vechi old friends (m.), *prietene vechi* old friends (f.)

The adjective *vioi* vivid has also two forms **masculine singular = masculine plural** and **feminine singular = feminine plural**

tânăr vioi vivid young man, *tineri vioi* vivid young men and

tânără vioaie vivid young lady, *tinere vioaie* vivid young ladies

3.3.1.5. One-form adjectives

Some adjectives of adverbial origin, as well as borrowed names of colors have only one invariable form: **om cumsecade** decent man, **femeie cumsecade** decent woman; **oameni cumsecade** decent men, **femei cumsecade** decent women; **perete roz** pink wall, **rochie roz** pink dress, **pereti roz** pink walls, **rochii roz** pink dresses.

all genders and numbers	
	various endings
	eficace efficient
	cumsecade nice, kind, decent
	roz pink
	kaki khaki
	gri gray
	bleu light blue
	maro brown

3.3.2. The usage of the adjective in pre-position

The adjective usually comes after the noun. However, in some emphatic constructions, the adjective can precede the noun. When placed before the noun, the adjective acquires an additional intensity, and the whole structure **adjective + noun** indicates a strong emotional involvement of the speaker. This is why the structure **adjective + noun** often occurs in exclamatory sentences:

— *Ce casă frumoasă!* ~ — *Frumoasă casă!* — What a beautiful house!

When the noun takes the indefinite article, in case of inversion the article will precede the adjective:

Doamna Alexandrescu este o actriță remarcabilă. ~ *Doamna Alexandrescu este o remarcabilă actriță!* Mrs. Alexandrescu is a remarkable actress!

When the noun takes the definite article, in case of inversion the article will be attached to the adjective:

Actrița excepțională de pe scenă este doamna Alexandrescu. ~ *Excepționala actriță de pe scenă este doamna Alexandrescu.* The outstanding actress on the stage is Mrs. Alexandrescu.

When the noun is preceded by a descriptive adjective and a possessive pronominal adjective, in case of inversion both the adjective and the possessive will precede the noun, and the article will be attached to the descriptive adjective. The initial word order **noun (article) + possessive + adjective** will thus become **adjective (article) + possessive + noun**:

El este prietenul meu bun Alexandru. ~ *El este bunul meu prieten Alexandru.* Here is my good friend Alexandru.

Some adjectives, for instance the one-form adjectives designating colors (**roz** pink, **bej** beige, **kaki** khaki) can never be placed before the noun they modify. The adjective **biet, biată, bieți, biete** poor, unhappy can only be placed before the noun it modifies:

E un biet câine la ușa noastră. There's a poor dog at our door.

Bietul câine de la ușa noastră este mic. The poor dog at our door is small.

3.3.3. Adjectival declension

The general rule for the declension of the adjective is the same as for the noun, i.e. only the feminine adjectives have special endings, for the genitive-dative singular. These endings are identical to those of the nominative plural.

When **noun + adjective** or **adjective + noun** group is declined with the indefinite article, the article precedes the whole structure, regardless the word order. When such a nominal group is declined with the definite article, the first member of the nominal group takes the article.

singular			
masculine and neuter		feminine	
N.-A.	un actor talentat un talentat actor	un roman minunat un minunat roman	o actriță talentată o talentată actriță
G.-D.	unui actor talentat unui talentat actor	unui roman minunat unui minunat roman	unei actrițe talentate unei talentate actrițe
N.-A.	actorul talentat talentatul actor	romanul minunat minunatul roman	actrița talentată talentata actriță
G.-D.	actorului talentat talentatului actor	romanului minunat minunatului roman	actriței talentate talentatei actrițe

plural			
masculine		feminine and neuter	
N.-A.	niște actori talentați niște talentați actori	niște romane minunate niște minunate romane	niște actrițe talentate niște talentate actrițe
G.-D.	unor actori talentați unor talentați actori	unor romane minunate unor minunate romane	unor actrițe talentate unor talentate actrițe
N.-A.	actorii talentați talentații actori	romanele minunate minunatele romane	actrițele talentate talentatele actrițe
G.-D.	actorilor talentați talentaților actori	romanelor minunate minunatelor romane	actrițelor talentate talentatelor actrițe

3.3.4. Degrees of comparison of the adjective

3.3.4.1 The comparative degree

3.3.4.1.1. The comparative of superiority

The comparative of superiority is formed with the adverb **mai** more preceding the actual adjective, and with the comparative prepositions **decât** or **ca** following it:

mai + adjective + decât / ca + accusative

Filmul este mai interesant decât / ca romanul. The movie is more interesting than the novel.

Am văzut un film mai interesant decât acesta. I saw a movie more interesting than this one.

Ea este mai mare decât mine. She is older than me.

El e mai mic ca tine. He's younger than you.

- the comparative preposition **ca** is more frequent than **decât** in colloquial speech

- nouns and pronouns after *decât* or *ca* are in the accusative case
- the adverb *mai* can be reinforced by other adverbs like *mult*, *cu mult*, *incomparabil*, *infinit*:
Filmul este mult mai / cu mult mai interesant decât romanul. The movie is much more interesting than the novel.

3.3.4.1.2. The comparative of equality

The comparative of equality is formed with the adverbial structures *tot așa de / tot atât de / la fel de* as, identically preceding the actual adjective, and with the comparative prepositions *ca* or *ca și* following it:

<i>tot așa de / tot atât de / la fel de + adjective + ca (și) + accusative</i>
<i>Filmul este tot așa de interesant ca romanul.</i> The movie is as interesting as the novel is.
<i>Am văzut un film la fel de interesant ca acesta.</i> I saw a movie as interesting as this one.
<i>El este tot atât de înalt ca și mine.</i> He is as tall as I am.
<i>Ea e tot atât de scundă ca și tine.</i> She is as short as you are.

- nouns and pronouns after *ca / ca și* are in the accusative case

3.3.4.1.3. The comparative of inferiority

The comparative of inferiority is formed with the adverbial structure *mai puțin* less preceding the actual adjective, and with the comparative prepositions *decât* or *ca* following it:

<i>mai puțin + adjective + decât / ca + accusative</i>
<i>Filmul este mai puțin interesant decât romanul.</i> The movie is less interesting than the novel.
<i>Am văzut un film mai puțin interesant decât acesta.</i> I saw a movie less interesting than this one.
<i>El este mai puțin înalt decât mine.</i> He is less tall than I am.
<i>Ea e mai puțin grasă ca tine.</i> She is less fat than you.

- nouns and pronouns after *decât* or *ca* are in the accusative
- the adverb *mai puțin* can be reinforced by other adverbs, such as *mult*, *cu mult*:
Filmul este cu mult mai puțin interesant decât romanul. The film is much less interesting than the novel.

3.3.4.2. The superlative degree

3.3.4.2.1. The superlative relative of superiority

The superlative relative of superiority is formed with the adverbial structure *cel / cea / cei / cele mai* the most preceding the actual adjective:

<i>cel / cea / cei / cele mai + adjective [+ dintre / din]</i>
<i>El a scris referatul cel mai interesant.</i> He wrote the most interesting paper.
<i>El a scris cel mai interesant referat.</i> He wrote the most interesting paper.
<i>Referatul lui este cel mai interesant din grupă.</i> His paper is the most interesting in class.
<i>Referatul lui este cel mai interesant dintre toate referatele din grupă.</i> His paper is the most interesting among all the papers in the class.
<i>A scris compunerea cea mai frumoasă.</i> She wrote the most beautiful composition.
<i>A scris cea mai frumoasă compunere.</i> She wrote the most beautiful composition.
<i>Compunerea ei este cea mai frumoasă din clasă.</i> Her composition is the most beautiful in class.
<i>Compunerea ei este cea mai frumoasă dintre toate compunerile din clasă.</i> Her composition is the most beautiful of all the compositions in the class.

- the element *cel, cea, cei, cele* that comes before the invariable component *mai* takes the gender and the number of the modified noun
- when the adjective comes after the noun it modifies, the noun takes the definite article: *romanul cel mai interesant* the most interesting novel, *cartea cea mai interesantă* the most interesting book, *colegii cei mai interesați* the most interesting colleagues (m.), *colegele cele mai interesante* the most interesting colleagues (f.)
- the adjective in the superlative degree can precede the modified noun, in which case the noun loses the definite article: *romanul cel mai interesant* but *cel mai interesant roman* the most interesting novel
- the complement of the adjective in the superlative relative is preceded by the preposition *dintre* when it is a noun or a pronoun in the plural, usually showing the group of homogenous objects the modified noun belongs to: *cel mai bun dintre studenți* the best among all the students, *cea mai bună dintre noi* the best one among us
- the complement of the adjective in the superlative is preceded by the preposition *din* when it is a noun or a pronoun in the singular: *cel mai bun din clasă* the best one in class

3.3.4.2.2. The superlative relative of inferiority

The superlative of inferiority is formed with the adverbial structure *cel / cea / cei / cele mai puțin* the least preceding the actual adjective:

<i>cel / cea / cei / cele mai puțin + adjective [+ dintre / din]</i>
<i>A scris referatul cel mai puțin interesant.</i> He wrote the least interesting paper.
<i>A scris cel mai puțin interesant referat.</i> He wrote the least interesting paper.
<i>Referatul lui este cel mai puțin interesant din grupă.</i> He wrote the less interesting paper in the class.
<i>Referatul lui este cel mai puțin interesant dintre toate referatele din grupă.</i> He wrote the least interesting paper of all the papers in the class.

- the element *cel, cea, cei, cele* takes the gender and the number of the modified noun
- if the adjective comes after the modified noun, the noun always takes the definite article: *romanul cel mai puțin interesant* the least interesting novel, *cartea cea mai puțin interesantă* the least interesting book
- the adjective in the superlative degree can precede the modified noun, in which case the noun loses the definite article: *romanul cel mai puțin interesant* but *cel mai puțin interesant roman* the least interesting novel

- when the complement of the adjective in the superlative relative is a noun or a pronoun in the plural, usually showing the group of homogenous objects to which the modified noun belongs to, it is preceded by the preposition *dintre*: **cel mai puțin amabil dintre studenți** the least kind among the students, **cea mai puțin amabilă dintre noi** the least kind among us
- when the complement of the adjective in the superlative is a noun or a pronoun in the singular, it is preceded by the preposition *din*: **cel mai puțin silitor din clasă** the least hard-working in class

3.3.4.2.3. The superlative absolute

The superlative absolute is formed with different adverbs preceding the actual adjective. The most frequent adverb is *foarte* very :

<i>foarte / tare / extrem de / cât se poate de + adjective</i>
<i>Am citit un articol foarte interesant.</i> I've read a very interesting article.
<i>Am citit o carte tare proastă.</i> I read a very bad book.
<i>Am văzut un film extrem de interesant.</i> I saw an extremely interesting movie.
<i>Păreră ei este cât se poate de importantă.</i> Her opinion is really important.

- the standard adverb used to form the superlative absolute is *foarte*
- the other adverbs or adverbial constructions are emotionally marked
- the adverb *tare* is used in the colloquial style

3.3.4.3. Adjectives that do not form degrees of comparison

Some adjectives do not form degrees of comparison: *superior* superior, *inferior* inferior, *prim* prime, first, *ultim* last, ultimate, *major* major, *minor* minor, *perfect* perfect, *desăvârșit* perfect, *anterior* previous, anterior, *ulterior* ulterior, *asemenea* alike, *optim* optimal, *unic* unique, *suprem* supreme.

3.4. Pronoun

3.4.1. Personal pronouns

3.4.1.1. The nominative case of the personal pronouns

There are 8 personal pronouns in Romanian:

singular	1 st pers			<i>eu</i>	
	2 nd pers			<i>tu</i>	
	3 rd pers	masculine			<i>el</i>
		feminine			<i>ea</i>
plural	1 st pers			<i>noi</i>	
	2 nd pers			<i>voi</i>	
	3 rd pers	masculine			<i>ei</i>
		feminine			<i>ele</i>

The pronouns *eu, el, ea, noi, ei, ele* correspond to *I, he, she, we, they*, but also to *me, him, her, us, them*, when used as nominals within the predicate: ***Eu sunt!*** It's me!

The personal pronouns in the nominative case are not frequently used with the verbal forms in Romanian, since the person and number are indicated by the verbal form itself. The pronoun is used mainly to point out an opposition or to lay special emphasis on the subject:

Sunt studentă. I am a student.

Eu sunt profesoara, ea e o studentă! I am the professor, she is a student!

3.4.1.2. The accusative case of the personal pronouns

3.4.1.2.1. Full and clitic forms of the accusative

Personal pronouns have two sets of forms in the accusative. There is a series of stressed (full) forms, and a series of unstressed (clitic) forms:

		nominative	accusative	
			stressed (full)	unstressed (clitic)
singular	1 st	<i>eu</i>	<i>(pe) mine</i>	<i>mă; -mă, mă-, m-, -m-</i>
	2 nd	<i>tu</i>	<i>(pe) tine</i>	<i>te; -te, te-, -te-</i>
	3 rd m.	<i>el</i>	<i>(pe) el</i>	<i>îl; -l, l-, -l-</i>
	3 rd f.	<i>ea</i>	<i>(pe) ea</i>	<i>o; -o, o-, -o-</i>
plural	1 st	<i>noi</i>	<i>(pe) noi</i>	<i>ne; -ne, ne-, -ne-</i>
	2 nd	<i>voi</i>	<i>(pe) voi</i>	<i>vă; -vă, vă-, v-, -v-</i>
	3 rd m.	<i>ei</i>	<i>(pe) ei</i>	<i>îi; -i, i-, -i-</i>
	3 rd f.	<i>ele</i>	<i>(pe) ele</i>	<i>le; -le, le-, -le-</i>

The stressed forms of the personal pronouns in the accusative are always preceded by a preposition, such as: ***pe*** on, ***la*** at, ***cu*** with, ***pe la*** at, in, ***pentru*** for, ***lângă*** next to, ***fără*** without, ***decât*** as, like, than, ***ca*** as, like, than, etc. The preposition ***pe*** is used both as a morphological marker without lexical meaning (indicating the direct object), and as a preposition with the lexical meaning 'on':

Te iubesc pe tine. I love you. (preposition ***pe*** without lexical meaning, marker of the direct object)

Am fost ieri la tine. I was at your place yesterday.

Are ceva pentru mine. He / she has something for me.

Ei au venit mai devreme decât noi. They came earlier than we did.

Ea locuiește cu el. She lives with him.

The unstressed forms of the personal pronouns in the accusative always accompany a verb. They can precede a verb, or be preceded by the verb:

Îl aștepti tu pe Andrei la gară? — Will you meet Andrei at the railroad station?

Așteaptă-l tu pe Andrei la gară, te rog! — Please, meet Andrei at the railroad station! (after the imperative affirmative of the pronominal verb)

The forms beginning with *î-* (*îl, îi*) occur as separate words:

Îl anunți tu că săptămâna viitoare avem test? — Will you tell him that we'll have a test next week?

Îi anunți tu că avem test săptămâna viitoare? — Will you tell them that we'll have a test next week?

The short equivalent forms without *î-* (with the *î-* elided) are always attached to a verbal form beginning or ending in a vowel:

I-ai anunțat de test? — Did you tell them about the test? (*îi + ai → i-ai*)

Anunță-l tu de test, te rog! — Tell him about the test, please! (after the imperative ending in the vowel *-ă*: *anunță + îl → anunță-l*)

The unstressed personal pronouns combine with verbs in different moods, tenses and persons in different ways. The basic combinations with the present indicative, compound perfect indicative, future 1 indicative and present subjunctive will be presented in this chapter (3.4.1.4.). Other possible combinations will be indicated within the sections that present different verbal moods and tenses, at Chapter 4.

3.4.1.2.2. The personal pronoun used as a direct object

When the personal pronoun is a direct object and a substitute for nouns that do not designate human beings, the unstressed forms of the 3rd person are used:

Punem dicționarul aici. We put the dictionary here. ***Îl punem aici.*** We put it here.

Punem cartea pe masă. We put the book here. ***O punem pe masă.*** We put it here.

Am auzit un zgomot. We heard a noise. ***L-am auzit.*** We heard it.

Vom citi o poezie românească. We'll read a Romanian poem. ***O vom citi.*** We'll read it.

When being a direct object and a substitute for nouns that designate human beings, the unstressed forms of the personal pronoun in all persons can be used, alone or accompanied by the equivalent full form :

Mă aștepti? Mă aștepti pe mine? Will you wait for me ? Mă aștepti pe mine ?

Te ascult. Te ascult pe tine. I'm listening to you.

Îl / o iubesc. Îl iubesc pe el. / O iubesc pe ea. I love him / her.

Ne așteptați? Ne așteptați pe noi? Will you wait for us ?

Vă așteptăm. Vă așteptăm pe voi. We will wait for you.

Îi / le așteptăm. Îi așteptăm pe ei. Le așteptăm pe ele. We are waiting for them (masc. / fem.)

The stressed forms are used either independently, in isolated constructions, or for emphasis. When used as direct objects designating human beings, the stressed forms of the personal pronoun in the accusative are preceded by the preposition *pe* (the preposition *pe* in this structure does not have lexical meaning, but only the function of a grammatical marker of the accusative case of people), and are used together with the corresponding unstressed forms:

— ***Te iubesc pe tine.*** I love you (I don't love someone else).

— ***Pe mine ?*** — (Do you love) me ?

— ***Da, pe tine !*** Yes, (I love) you !

In other words, in such structures the unstressed forms of the personal pronoun are required, while the presence of the stressed forms is optional.

3.4.1.3. The dative case of the personal pronouns

3.4.1.3.1. Full and clitic forms of the dative

Like for the accusative, the personal pronoun has two sets of forms in the dative : stressed (full) forms and unstressed (clitic) forms.

		nom.	accusative		dative	
			stressed	unstressed	stressed	unstressed
sing.	1 st	<i>eu</i>	<i>pe mine</i>	<i>mă</i>	<i>mie</i>	<i>îmi, mi, -mi, mi-, -mi-</i>
	2 nd	<i>tu</i>	<i>pe tine</i>	<i>te</i>	<i>ție</i>	<i>îți, -ți, ți-, -ți-</i>
	3 rd m.	<i>el</i>	<i>pe el</i>	<i>îl</i>	<i>lui</i>	<i>îi, -i, i-, -i-</i>
	3 rd f.	<i>ea</i>	<i>pe ea</i>	<i>o</i>	<i>ei</i>	
pl.	1 st	<i>noi</i>	<i>pe noi</i>	<i>ne</i>	<i>nouă</i>	<i>ne, -ne, ne-, ni, -ni-</i>
	2 nd	<i>voi</i>	<i>pe voi</i>	<i>vă</i>	<i>vouă</i>	<i>vă, -vă, v-, vi, -vi-</i>
	3 rd m.	<i>ei</i>	<i>pe ei</i>	<i>îi</i>	<i>lor</i>	<i>le, -le, le-, li, -li-</i>
	3 rd f.	<i>ele</i>	<i>pe ele</i>	<i>le</i>		

- in the 3rd person singular there are two stressed dative forms, one for masculine (*lui*) and one for feminine (*ei*); the unstressed forms are identical (*îi, -i-*)
- in the 3rd person plural there is no gender opposition

The unstressed forms of the personal pronouns in the dative, like those in the accusative, always accompany a verb:

- *Îmi aduce Dan cartea.* Dan is bringing me the book.
- *Mi-ai adus cartea?* Have you brought me the book?
- *Îmi va aduce Dan cartea.* Dan will bring me the book.

The unstressed personal pronouns combine with verbs in different moods, tenses and persons in different ways. The basic combinations with the present indicative, compound perfect indicative, future 1 indicative and present subjunctive will be presented in this chapter (3.4.1.4.). Other possible combinations will be introduced within the sections that present different verbal moods and tenses, at Chapter 4.

The forms beginning with *î-* (*îmi, îți, îi*) occur as separate words:

- *Îmi explici despre ce este vorba?* — Can you explain to me what all this is about?

The short equivalent forms without *î-* (with the *î-* elided) are always attached to another word that begins or ends in a vowel:

- *Mi-a explicat despre ce este vorba.* He explained to me what all this was about.

The forms *ni* (1st pers. pl.), *vi* (2nd pers. pl.) and *li* (3rd pers. pl.) are used in certain combinations with other unstressed personal pronouns in the accusative: *ne + îi* (3rd pers. pl. masc.) → *ni-i*; *vă + le* (3rd pers. pl. fem.) → *vi le*; *le + îl* (3rd pers. sing. masc.) → *li-l*.

3.4.1.3.2. The personal pronoun used as an indirect object

Generally, in order to express the indirect object, the unstressed forms of the personal pronoun in the dative are used :

Îmi spui adevărul ? Are you telling me the truth ?

Îți dau o carte bună. I'm giving you a good book.

The stressed forms of the personal pronouns in the dative are used independently, in isolated constructions, or as a repetitive element, for emphasis:

— **Îmi aduce Dan cartea.** Dan is bringing me the book.

— **Tie?** To you? **Îmi aduce cartea mie, nu ție!** He's bringing the book to me, not to you !

When the stressed forms of the personal pronouns in the dative are used, the double expression of the indirect object (i.e. using the correlative unstressed form in the same sentence) is required:

Vă explic vouă despre ce este vorba, ei știu deja. I'm explaining to you what all this is about, they already know.

Le-ai spus și lor unde mergem mâine? Have you also told them where we are going tomorrow?

As for the direct object, in structures with the indirect object the unstressed forms of the personal pronoun are required, while the presence of the stressed forms is optional.

3.4.1.4. Basic patterns of combining personal pronouns in the accusative / dative with verbs

The short forms of the pronouns have a fixed position when combining with the verbs in different tenses. The long forms can be used in different positions.

3.4.1.4.1. With the verb in the present indicative

In the **present indicative**, the unstressed forms of the personal pronouns always precede the verb, while the stressed forms usually come after the verb or may precede the verb ("affected" or stylistically significant order). When the direct object is a noun designating a person, the verb is always preceded by the unstressed form of the pronoun. In negated forms, the particle **nu** precedes the pronoun in the accusative. The elision of the initial vowel in the unstressed forms of the pronoun after the negation **nu**, or of the vowel **-u** in the negation **nu** before the feminine pronoun **o** is not required, but it is very common in actual speech.

The basic patterns of combining accusative and dative pronouns with verbs in the present indicative are :

affirmative	negative
Mă ascultă (pe mine) și îmi (și-mi) răspunde (mie). He is listening to me and answering to me.	Nu mă ascultă (pe mine) și nu îmi (nu-mi) răspunde (mie). He is not listening to me and he is not answering to me.
Te ascultă (pe tine) și îți (și-ți) răspunde (ție).	Nu te ascultă (pe tine) și nu îți (nu-ți) răspunde (ție).
Îl ascultă (pe el) și îi (și-i) răspunde (lui).	Nu îl (nu-l) ascultă (pe el) și nu îi (nu-i) răspunde (lui).
O ascultă (pe ea) și îi (și-i) răspunde (ei).	Nu o (n-o) ascultă (pe ea) și nu îi (nu-i) răspunde (ei).
Ne ascultă (pe noi) și ne răspunde (nouă).	Nu ne ascultă (pe noi) și nu ne răspunde (nouă).
Vă ascultă (pe voi) și vă răspunde (vouă).	Nu vă ascultă (pe voi) și nu vă răspunde (vouă).
Îi ascultă (pe ei) și le răspunde (lor).	Nu îi (nu-i) ascultă (pe ei) și nu le răspunde (lor).
Le ascultă (pe ele) și le răspunde (lor).	Nu le ascultă (pe ele) și nu le răspunde (lor).

The same patterns are used with verbs in the imperfect, simple perfect and pluperfect indicative.

3.4.1.4.2. With the verb in the compound perfect

In the **compound perfect** of the indicative, the unstressed forms precede the auxiliary. When combining the unstressed forms of the pronoun and the auxiliary *a avea* that forms the compound perfect, the elision / synaeresis and hyphenation are required: *mă + a* → *m-a*, *te + a* → *te-a*, *îl + am* → *l-am*, *le + am* → *le-am*, etc. **The unstressed form of the 3rd person singular feminine *o* comes after the verb.** The stressed forms usually come after the verb (the "logical" order) or may precede the verb ("affected" or stylistically significant order). When the direct object is a noun designating a person, the verb is always preceded by the unstressed form of the pronoun. In negated forms the negation precedes the unstressed form of the pronoun. When the pronoun is the feminine *o*, that comes after the verb, the negation precedes the auxiliary, in which case the elision of the *vowel u* in *nu* may occur.

The possible combinations of the unstressed personal pronouns with the auxiliary *a avea* in the compound perfect are:

accusative

	<i>mă</i>	<i>te</i>	<i>îl</i>	<i>o</i>	<i>ne</i>	<i>vă</i>	<i>îi</i>	<i>le</i>
<i>am</i>	<i>m-am</i>	<i>te-am</i>	<i>l-am</i>	<i>the form o comes after the verb</i>	—	<i>v-am</i>	<i>i-am</i>	<i>le-am</i>
<i>ai</i>	<i>m-ai</i>	<i>te-ai</i>	<i>l-ai</i>		<i>ne-ai</i>	—	<i>i-ai</i>	<i>le-ai</i>
<i>a</i>	<i>m-a</i>	<i>te-a</i>	<i>l-a</i>		<i>ne-a</i>	<i>v-a</i>	<i>i-a</i>	<i>le-a</i>
<i>am</i>	—	<i>te-am</i>	<i>l-am</i>		<i>ne-am</i>	<i>v-am</i>	<i>i-am</i>	<i>le-am</i>
<i>ați</i>	<i>m-ați</i>	—	<i>l-ați</i>		<i>ne-ați</i>	<i>v-ați</i>	<i>i-ați</i>	<i>le-ați</i>
<i>au</i>	<i>m-au</i>	<i>te-au</i>	<i>l-au</i>		<i>ne-au</i>	<i>v-au</i>	<i>i-au</i>	<i>le-au</i>

dative

	<i>îmi</i>	<i>îți</i>	<i>îi</i>	<i>ne</i>	<i>vă</i>	<i>le</i>
<i>am</i>	<i>mi-am</i>	<i>ți-am</i>	<i>i-am</i>	—	<i>v-am</i>	<i>le-am</i>
<i>ai</i>	<i>mi-ai</i>	<i>ți-ai</i>	<i>i-ai</i>	<i>ne-ai</i>	—	<i>le-ai</i>
<i>a</i>	<i>mi-a</i>	<i>ți-a</i>	<i>i-a</i>	<i>ne-a</i>	<i>v-a</i>	<i>le-a</i>
<i>am</i>	—	<i>ți-am</i>	<i>i-am</i>	<i>ne-am</i>	<i>v-am</i>	<i>le-am</i>
<i>ați</i>	<i>mi-ați</i>	—	<i>i-ați</i>	<i>ne-ați</i>	<i>v-ați</i>	<i>le-ați</i>
<i>au</i>	<i>mi-au</i>	<i>ți-au</i>	<i>i-au</i>	<i>ne-au</i>	<i>v-au</i>	<i>le-au</i>

The basic patterns of combining accusative and dative pronouns with verbs in the compound perfect indicative are :

affirmative	negative
<i>M-a ascultat (pe mine) și mi-a răspuns (mie).</i> He listened to me and answered me.	<i>Nu m-a ascultat (pe mine) și nu mi-a răspuns (mie).</i> He did not listen to me and did not answer me.
<i>Te-a ascultat (pe tine) și ți-a răspuns (ție).</i>	<i>Nu te-a ascultat (pe tine) și nu ți-a răspuns (ție).</i>
<i>L-a ascultat (pe el) și i-a răspuns (lui).</i> <i>A ascultat-o (pe ea) și i-a răspuns (ei).</i>	<i>Nu l-a ascultat (pe el) și nu i-a răspuns (lui).</i> <i>Nu a (n-a) ascultat-o (pe ea) și nu i-a răspuns (ei).</i>
<i>Ne-a ascultat (pe noi) și ne-a răspuns (nouă).</i>	<i>Nu ne-a ascultat (pe noi) și nu ne-a răspuns (nouă).</i>
<i>V-a ascultat (pe voi) și v-a răspuns (vouă).</i>	<i>Nu v-a ascultat (pe voi) și nu v-a răspuns (vouă).</i>
<i>I-a ascultat (pe ei) și le-a răspuns (lor).</i> <i>Le-a ascultat (pe ele) și le-a răspuns (lor).</i>	<i>Nu i-a ascultat (pe ei) și nu le-a răspuns (lor).</i> <i>Nu le-a ascultat (pe ele) și nu le-a răspuns (lor).</i>

The same patterns are used with the verbs in the optative-conditional and presumptive moods.

3.4.1.4.3. With the verb in the future 1 indicative

In the **future 1** of the indicative the unstressed forms always precede the auxiliary, while the stressed forms usually come after the verb (the "logical" order) or may precede the verb ("affected" or stylistically significant order). When the direct object is a noun designating a person, the verb is always preceded by the unstressed form of the pronoun. With negated forms, the rules for the present tense should be followed.

The basic patterns of combining accusative and dative pronouns with verbs in the future 1 indicative are :

affirmative	negative
<i>Mă va asculta (pe mine) și îmi (și-mi) va răspunde (mie).</i> He will listen to me and will answer me.	<i>Nu mă va asculta (pe mine) și nu îmi (nu-mi) va răspunde (mie).</i> He will not listen to me and will not answer me.
<i>Te va asculta (pe tine) și îți (și-ți) va răspunde (ție).</i>	<i>Nu te va asculta (pe tine) și nu îți (nu-ți) va răspunde (ție).</i>
<i>Îl va asculta (pe el) și îi (și-i) va răspunde (lui).</i>	<i>Nu îl (nu-l) va asculta (pe el) și nu îi (nu-I) va răspunde (lui).</i>
<i>O va asculta (pe ea) și îi (și-i) va răspunde (ei).</i>	<i>Nu o (n-o) va asculta (pe ea) și nu îi (nu-I) va răspunde (ei).</i>
<i>Ne va asculta (pe noi) și ne va răspunde (nouă).</i>	<i>Nu ne va asculta (pe noi) și nu ne va răspunde (nouă).</i>
<i>Vă va asculta (pe voi) și vă va răspunde (vouă).</i>	<i>Nu vă va asculta (pe voi) și nu vă va răspunde (vouă).</i>
<i>Îi va asculta (pe ei) și le va răspunde (lor).</i>	<i>Nu îi (nu-i) va asculta (pe ei) și nu le va răspunde (lor).</i>
<i>Le va asculta (pe ele) și le va răspunde (lor).</i>	<i>Nu le va asculta (pe ele) și nu le va răspunde (lor).</i>

The same patterns are used with verbs in the future perfect and future in the past indicative.

3.4.1.4.4. With the verb in the present subjunctive

In the **present subjunctive** the unstressed forms of the personal pronouns are inserted between the structural element *să* and the actual verb, while the stressed forms usually come after the verb or may precede the verb ("affected" or stylistically significant order). In negated forms, the particle *nu* precedes the pronoun in the accusative or dative. The elision of the initial vowel *î* in the unstressed forms of the pronoun after the negation *nu* or of the *u* vowel in the negation *nu* before the feminine pronoun *o*, is not required, but it is very common in actual speech.

The basic patterns of combining accusative and dative pronouns with verbs in the present subjunctive are :

affirmative	negative
<i>Vreau să mă asculte (pe mine) și să îmi (să-mi) răspundă (mie).</i> I want him / her to listen to me and to answer me.	<i>Vreau să nu mă asculte (pe mine) și să nu îmi (nu-mi) răspundă (mie).</i> I want him / her not to listen to me and not to answer me.
<i>Vreau să te asculte (pe tine) și să îți (să-ți) răspundă (ție).</i>	<i>Vreau să nu te asculte (pe tine) și să nu îți (nu-ți) răspundă (ție).</i>
<i>Vreau să îl asculte (pe el) și să îi (să-i) răspundă (lui).</i>	<i>Vreau să nu îl (nu-l) asculte (pe el) și să nu îi (nu-i) răspundă (lui).</i>

<i>Vreau să o (s-o) asculte (pe ea) și să îi (să-i) răspundă (ei).</i> <i>Vreau să ne asculte (pe noi) și să ne răspundă (nouă).</i> <i>Vreau să vă asculte (pe voi) și să vă răspundă (vouă).</i> <i>Vreau să îi (să-i) asculte (pe ei) și să le răspundă (lor).</i> <i>Vreau să le asculte (pe ele) și să le răspundă (lor).</i>	<i>Vreau să nu o (n-o) asculte (pe ea) și să nu îi (nu-i) răspundă (ei).</i> <i>Vreau să nu ne asculte (pe noi) și să nu ne răspundă (nouă).</i> <i>Vreau să nu vă asculte (pe voi) și să nu vă răspundă (vouă).</i> <i>Vreau să nu îi (nu-i) asculte (pe ei) și să nu le răspundă (lor).</i> <i>Vreau să nu le asculte (pe ele) și să nu le răspundă (lor).</i>
--	--

The same patterns are used with the past subjunctive and with other verbal tenses based on the subjunctive (future 2 and 3 indicative).

3.4.1.5. Differentiating the accusative and the dative unstressed personal pronouns

When the unstressed pronouns in the accusative or in the dative are identical, the nature of the verb (more precisely its transitivity / non-transitivity) and the context clarify the meaning and eliminate the ambiguity:

<i>le</i>	direct obj., accus. of <i>ele</i> indirect obj., dat. of <i>ei</i> indirect obj., dat. of <i>ele</i>	<i>Le aștept la aeroport.</i> (pe cine? pe Adina și Ioana) I will pick them up at the airport. (whom? Adina and Ioana) <i>Le dau niște cărți în română.</i> (cui? lui Dan și lui Ion) I will give them some Romanian books (to whom? to Dan and Ion) <i>Le dau niște cărți.</i> (cui? Adinei și Ioanei) I will give them some Romanian books (to whom? to Adina and Ioana)
<i>îi</i>	direct obj., accus. of <i>ei</i> indirect obj., dat. of <i>el</i> indirect obj., dat. of <i>ea</i>	<i>Îi aștept la aeroport.</i> (pe cine? pe Dan și pe Ion) I will pick them up at the airport. (whom? Dan and Ion) <i>Îi cumpăr o carte.</i> (cui? lui Ion) I will buy him a book. (to whom? to Ion) <i>Îi cumpăr o carte.</i> (cui? Oanei) I will buy her a book. (to whom? to Oana)
<i>ne</i>	direct obj., accus. of <i>noi</i> indirect obj., dat. of <i>noi</i>	<i>Ne așteaptă acasă.</i> (pe cine? pe noi) They are waiting for us at home. (whom? us) <i>Ne cumpără bilete.</i> (cui? nouă) They are buying us tickets. (to whom? to us)
<i>vă</i>	direct obj., accus. of <i>voi</i> indirect obj., dat. of <i>voi</i>	<i>Vă așteaptă acasă.</i> (pe cine? pe voi) They are waiting for you at home. (for whom? for you) <i>Vă cumpără bilete.</i> (cui? vouă) They are buying you tickets. (to whom? to you)

3.4.1.6. Verbal constructions with personal pronouns in the accusative and dative

Certain fixed verbal constructions with personal pronouns in the accusative or in the dative are very frequent. They generally indicate physical condition or emotional states of being, such as hunger, thirst, cold, pain, itchiness, shame, etc. The constructions with the dative are impersonal. The most common such fixed structures are :

With the accusative

- pe cine *doare ce* indicates pain: — *Ce te doare? – pe mine mă doare ce*

Pe mine mă doare capul. I have a headache.

- pe cine *ustură ce* indicates burning sensation: — *Ce te ustură? – pe mine mă ustură ce*

Mă ustură ochii. My eyes are burning.

- *pe cine mănâncă ce* indicates itchy sensation : — ***Ce te mănâncă? – pe mine mă mănâncă ce Mă mănâncă pielea.*** My skin is itchy.

With the dative

- *cui îi place ce, de cine, unde* to like:— ***Ce îți place ?*** What do you like? — ***De cine îți place?*** Whom do you like ? — ***Unde îți place ?*** Where do you like to be ?

Îmi place mult romanul acesta. I like this novel very much.

Îmi place de el. I like him.

Îmi place în România. I like to be in Romania.

- *cui îi e dor de cine, de ce* to miss: — ***De cine ți-e dor?*** Who do you miss ? — ***De ce ți-e dor?*** What do you miss ?

Mi-e dor de prietena mea. I miss my friend.

Ei îi este dor de casă. She is homesick.

Copiii lor le e dor de iarnă. The kids miss winter.

- *cui îi e poftă de ce* to be hungry for: — ***De ce ți-e poftă?*** — What would you like to eat?

Mi-e poftă de mâncare românească. I am hungry for some Romanian food.

- *cui îi e teamă / frică de cine, de ce* to be afraid, to be scared of: — ***De cine ți-e teamă?*** Who are you afraid of? — ***De ce ți-e frică?*** What are you afraid of?

Mi-e teamă de acest examen. I'm afraid of this exam.

Mi-e frică de tine. I am afraid of you. You scare me.

cui îi e rușine de cine, de ce to be ashamed of, to be shy: — ***De cine ți-e rușine?*** Who are you ashamed of ? — ***De ce ți-e rușine?*** What are you ashamed of?

Mi-e rușine de ce am făcut. I'm ashamed of what I did.

Mi-e rușine de el. I feel shy in front of him.

cui îi pare bine de ce to be glad, to be happy with, of: — ***De ce îți pare bine?*** What are you glad of?

Îmi pare bine de cunoștință. Glad to meet you.

cui îi pare rău de to be sorry about, of: — ***De ce îți pare rău?*** What are you sorry about?

Îmi pare rău de cele întâmplate. I'm sorry about that.

cui îi e bine / rău to feel good / bad: — ***Cum îți e?*** How do you feel?

Mie nu prea mi-e bine. — I don't feel that good.

cui îi e foame / sete / somn / frig / cald to be hungry / thirsty / sleepy / cold / hot: — ***Ți-e foame / sete / somn / frig / cald?***

Mi-e foame. Vreau ceva de mâncare. I'm hungry. I want something to eat.

Aseară mi-a fost foarte sete. I was very thirsty last night.

Nu mai pot lucra, mi-e foarte somn. I can't work, I am very sleepy.

Clima aici este capricioasă: acuma ne e cald, peste zece minute ne e frig... The climate here is "moody": now we feel hot, ten minutes later we are cold...

3.4.1.7. Combinations of double personal pronouns (dative and accusative) with verbs

When the same verb takes both a direct and indirect object, expressed – both of them – by unstressed forms of the personal pronoun, the two unstressed forms combine in a specific way and suffer certain phonetic and graphic

changes. As a rule, the pronouns precede the verbal form. Within the group of two unstressed pronouns, the dative is on the first position.

Below are the combinations of all the indirect objects and the direct objects in the 3rd person with the basic tenses of the indicative mood, as well as with the present subjunctive. The combinations with other tenses and moods are presented in Chapter 4, within each section describing how to form other tenses and other moods.

3.4.1.7.1. With the present, compound perfect and future 1 indicative

The verb used in all the examples below is *a trimite* to send, since it accepts both a direct object (*ce* what) and an indirect one (*cui* to whom). The substituted nouns used as direct objects of three genders are : *trandafir* rose (m.), *garoafă* carnation (f.) and *pachet* package (n.). The adverbs of circumstantial are *astăzi* today, *ieri* yesterday and *mâine* tomorrow:

- indirect object 1st pers. sing. (*îmi*) + direct object masc. / neuter sing. (*îl*)

present : *Îmi trimite trandafirul astăzi. Mi-l trimite astăzi.*
Îmi trimite pachetul astăzi. Mi-l trimite astăzi.
 comp. perf. : *Mi-a trimis trandafirul ieri. Mi l-a trimis ieri.*
Mi-a trimis pachetul ieri. Mi l-a trimis ieri.
 future : *Îmi va trimite trandafirul mâine. Mi-l va trimite mâine.*
Îmi va trimite pachetul mâine. Mi-l va trimite mâine.

- indirect object 1st pers. sing. (*îmi*) + direct object fem. sing. (*o*)

present : *Îmi trimite garoafa astăzi. Mi-o trimite astăzi.*
 comp. perf. : *Mi-a trimis garoafa ieri. Mi-a trimis-o ieri.*
 future : *Îmi va trimite garoafa mâine. Mi-o va trimite mâine*

- indirect object 1st pers. sing. (*îmi*) + direct object masc. pl. (*îi*)

present : *Îmi trimite trandafirii astăzi. Mi-i trimite astăzi.*
 comp. perf. : *Mi-a trimis trandafirii ieri. Mi i-a trimis ieri.*
 future : *Îmi va trimite trandafirii mâine. Mi-i va trimite mâine.*

- indirect object 1st pers. sing. (*îmi*) + direct object fem. / neuter pl. (*le*)

present : *Îmi trimite garoafele astăzi. Mi le trimite astăzi.*
Îmi trimite pachetele astăzi. Mi le trimite astăzi.
 comp. perf. : *Mi-a trimis garoafele ieri. Mi le-a trimis ieri.*
Mi-a trimis pachetele ieri. Mi le-a trimis ieri.
 future : *Îmi va trimite garoafele mâine. Mi le va trimite mâine.*
Îmi va trimite pachetele mâine. Mi le va trimite mâine.

- indirect object 2nd pers. sing. (*îți*) + direct object masc. / neuter sing. (*îl*)

present : *Îți trimite trandafirul astăzi. Ți-l trimite astăzi.*
Îți trimite pachetul astăzi. Ți-l trimite astăzi.
 comp. perf. : *Ți-a trimis trandafirul ieri. Ți l-a trimis ieri.*
Ți-a trimis pachetul ieri. Ți l-a trimis ieri.
 future : *Îți va trimite trandafirul mâine. Ți-l va trimite mâine.*
Îți va trimite pachetul mâine. Ți-l va trimite mâine.

- **indirect object 2nd pers. sing. (îți) + direct object fem. sing. (o)**

present : *Îți trimite garoafa astăzi. Ți-o trimite astăzi.*
 comp. perf. : *Ți-a trimis garoafa ieri. Ți-a trimis-o ieri.*
 future : *Îți va trimite garoafa mâine. Ți-o va trimite mâine.*

- **indirect object 2nd pers. sing. (îți) + direct object masc. pl. (ii)**

present : *Îți trimite trandafirii astăzi. Ți-i trimite astăzi.*
 comp. perf. : *Ți-a trimis trandafirii ieri. Ți i-a trimis ieri.*
 future : *Îți va trimite trandafirii mâine. Ți-i va trimite mâine.*

- **indirect object 2nd pers. sing. (îți) + direct object fem. / neuter pl. (le)**

present : *Îți trimite garoafele astăzi. Ți le trimite astăzi.*
Îți trimite pachetele astăzi. Ți le trimite astăzi.
 comp. perf. : *Ți-a trimis garoafele ieri. Ți le-a trimis ieri.*
Ți-a trimis pachetele ieri. Ți le-a trimis ieri.
 future : *Îți va trimite garoafele mâine. Ți le va trimite mâine.*
Îți va trimite pachetele mâine. Ți le va trimite mâine.

- **indirect object 3rd pers. sing., masc. and fem. (îi) + direct object masc. / neuter sing. (il)**

present : *Îi trimite trandafirul astăzi. I-l trimite astăzi.*
Îi trimite pachetul astăzi. I-l trimite astăzi.
 comp. perf. : *I-a trimis trandafirul ieri. I l-a trimis ieri.*
I-a trimis pachetul ieri. I l-a trimis ieri.
 future : *Îi va trimite trandafirul mâine. I-l va trimite mâine.*
Îi va trimite pachetul mâine. I-l va trimite mâine.

- **indirect object 3rd pers. sing., masc. and fem. (îi) + direct object fem. sing. (o)**

present : *Îi trimite garoafa astăzi. I-o trimite astăzi.*
 comp. perf. : *I-a trimis garoafa ieri. I-a trimis-o ieri.*
 future : *Îi va trimite garoafa mâine. I-o va trimite mâine*

- **indirect object 3rd pers. sing., masc. and fem. (îi) + direct object masc. pl. (ii)**

present : *Îi trimite trandafirii astăzi. I-i trimite astăzi.*
 comp. perf. : *I-a trimis trandafirii ieri. I i-a trimis ieri.*
 future : *Îi va trimite trandafirii mâine. I-i va trimite mâine.*

- **indirect object 3rd pers. sing., masc. and fem. (îi) + direct object fem. / neuter pl. (le)**

present : *Îi trimite garoafele astăzi. I le trimite astăzi.*
Îi trimite pachetele astăzi. I le trimite astăzi.
 comp. perf. : *I-a trimis garoafele ieri. I le-a trimis ieri.*
I-a trimis pachetele ieri. I le-a trimis ieri.
 future : *Îi va trimite garoafele mâine. I le va trimite mâine.*
Îi va trimite pachetele mâine. I le va trimite mâine.

- **indirect object 1st pers. pl. (ne) + direct object masc. / neuter sing. (îl)**

present : *Ne trimite trandafirul astăzi. Ni-l trimite astăzi.
Ne trimite pachetul astăzi. Ni-l trimite astăzi.*

comp. perf. : *Ne-a trimis trandafirul ieri. Ni l-a trimis ieri.
Ne-a trimis pachetul ieri. Ni l-a trimis ieri.*

future : *Ne va trimite trandafirul mâine. Ni-l va trimite mâine.
Ne va trimite pachetul mâine. Ni-l va trimite mâine.*

- **indirect object 1st pers. pl. (ne) + direct object fem. sing. (o)**

present : *Ne trimite garoafa astăzi. Ne-o trimite astăzi.*

comp. perf. : *Ne-a trimis garoafa ieri. **Ne-a trimis-o** ieri.*

future : *Ne va trimite garoafa mâine. Ne-o va trimite mâine.*

- **indirect object 1st pers. pl. (ne) + direct object masc. pl. (îi)**

present : *Ne trimite trandafirii astăzi. Ni-i trimite astăzi.*

comp. perf. : *Ne-a trimis trandafirii ieri. Ni i-a trimis ieri.*

future : *Ne va trimite trandafirii mâine. Ni-i va trimite mâine.*

- **indirect object 1st pers. pl. (ne) + direct object fem. /neuter pl. (le)**

present : *Ne trimite garoafele astăzi. Ni le trimite astăzi.
Ne trimite pachetele astăzi. Ni le trimite astăzi.*

comp. perf. : *Ne-a trimis garoafele ieri. Ni le-a trimis ieri.
Ne-a trimis pachetele ieri. Ni le-a trimis ieri.*

future : *Ne va trimite garoafele mâine. Ni le va trimite mâine.
Ne va trimite pachetele mâine. Ni le va trimite mâine.*

- **indirect object 2nd pers. pl. (vă) + direct object masc. / neuter sing. (îl)**

present : *Vă trimite trandafirul astăzi. Vi-l trimite astăzi.
Vă trimite pachetul astăzi. Vi-l trimite astăzi.*

comp. perf. : *V-a trimis trandafirul ieri. Vi l-a trimis ieri.
V-a trimis pachetul ieri. Vi l-a trimis ieri.*

future : *Vă va trimite trandafirul mâine. Vi-l va trimite mâine.
Vă va trimite pachetul mâine. Vi-l va trimite mâine.*

- **indirect object 2nd pers. pl. (vă) + direct object fem. sing. (o)**

present : *Vă trimite garoafa astăzi. V-o trimite astăzi.*

comp. perf. : *V-a trimis garoafa ieri. **V-a trimis-o** ieri.*

future : *Vă va trimite garoafa mâine. V-o va trimite mâine*

- **indirect object 2nd pers. pl. (vă) + direct object masc. pl. (îi)**

present : *Vă trimite trandafirii astăzi. Vi-i trimite astăzi.*

comp. perf. : *V-a trimis trandafirii ieri. Vi i-a trimis ieri.*

future : *Vă va trimite trandafirii mâine. Vi-i va trimite mâine.*

- **indirect object 2nd pers. pl. (vă) + direct object fem. / neuter pl. (le)**

present : *Vă trimite garoafele astăzi. Vi le trimite astăzi.
Vă trimite pachetele astăzi. Vi le trimite astăzi.*

comp. perf. : *V-a trimis garoafele ieri. Vi le-a trimis ieri.
V-a trimis pachetele ieri. Vi le-a trimis ieri.*

future : *Vă va trimite garoafele mâine. Vi le va trimite mâine.
Vă va trimite pachetele mâine. Vi le va trimite mâine.*

- **indirect object 3rd pers. pl., masc. and fem. (le) + direct object masc. / neuter sing. (îl)**

present : *Le trimite trandafirul astăzi. Li-l trimite astăzi.
Le trimite pachetul astăzi. Li-l trimite astăzi.*

comp. perf. : *Le-a trimis trandafirul ieri. Li l-a trimis ieri.
Le-a trimis pachetul ieri. Li l-a trimis ieri.*

future : *Le va trimite trandafirul mâine. Li-l va trimite mâine.
Le va trimite pachetul mâine. Li-l va trimite mâine.*

- **indirect object 3rd pers. pl., masc. and fem. (le) + direct object fem. sing. (o)**

present : *Le trimite garoafa astăzi. Le-o trimite astăzi.*

comp. perf. : *Le-a trimis garoafa ieri. **Le-a trimis-o** ieri.*

future : *Le va trimite garoafa mâine. Le-o va trimite mâine*

- **indirect object 3rd pers. pl., masc. and fem. (le) + direct object masc. pl. (îi)**

present : *Le trimite trandafirii astăzi. Li-i trimite astăzi.*

comp. perf. : *Le-a trimis trandafirii ieri. Li i-a trimis ieri.*

future : *Le va trimite trandafirii mâine. Li-i va trimite mâine.*

- **indirect object 3rd pers. pl., masc. and fem. (le) + direct object fem. / neuter pl. (le)**

present : *Le trimite garoafele astăzi. Li le trimite astăzi.
Le trimite pachetele astăzi. Li le trimite astăzi.*

comp. perf. : *Le-a trimis garoafele ieri. Li le-a trimis ieri.
Le-a trimis pachetele ieri. Li le-a trimis ieri.*

future : *Le va trimite garoafele mâine. Li le va trimite mâine.
Le va trimite pachetele mâine. Li le va trimite mâine.*

3.4.1.7.2. With the present subjunctive

The same combinations of the indirect objects and the direct objects in the 3rd person can be used with the subjunctive. The combined pronouns will be placed between the structural element *să* and the actual verbal form:

- **indirect object 1st pers. sing. (îmi) + direct object masc. / neuter sing. (îl)**

Vreau să îmi / să-mi trimită trandafirul / pachetul astăzi. Vreau să mi-l trimită astăzi.

- indirect object 1st pers. sing. (*îmi*) + direct object fem. sing. (*o*)
Vreau să îmi / să-mi trimită garoafa astăzi. Vreau să mi-o trimită astăzi.
- indirect object 1st pers. sing. (*îmi*) + direct object masc. pl. (*îi*)
Vreau să îmi / să-mi trimită trandafirii astăzi. Vreau să mi-i trimită astăzi.
- indirect object 1st pers. sing. (*îmi*) + direct object fem. / neuter pl. (*le*)
Vreau să îmi / să-mi trimită garoafele / pachetele astăzi. Vreau să mi le trimită astăzi.
- indirect object 2nd pers. sing. (*îți*) + direct object masc. / neuter sing. (*îl*)
Vreau să îți / să-ți trimită trandafirul / pachetul astăzi. Vreau să ți-l trimită astăzi.
- indirect object 2nd pers. sing. (*îți*) + direct object fem. sing. (*o*)
Vreau să îți / să-ți trimită garoafa astăzi. Vreau să ți-o trimită astăzi.
- indirect object 2nd pers. sing. (*îți*) + direct object masc. pl. (*îi*)
Vreau să îți / să-ți trimită trandafirii astăzi. Vreau să ți-i trimită astăzi.
- indirect object 2nd pers. sing. (*îți*) + direct object fem. / neuter pl. (*le*)
Vreau să îți trimită garoafele / pachetele astăzi. Vreau să ți lea trimită astăzi.
- indirect object 3rd pers. sing., masc. and fem. (*îi*) + direct object masc. / neuter sing. (*îl*)
Vreau să îi / să-i trimită trandafirul / pachetul astăzi. Vreau să i-l trimită astăzi.
- indirect object 3rd pers. sing., masc. and fem. (*îi*) + direct object fem. sing. (*o*)
Vreau să îi / să-i trimită garoafa astăzi. Vreau să i-o trimită astăzi.
- indirect object 3rd pers. sing., masc. and fem. (*îi*) + direct object masc. pl. (*îi*)
Vreau să îi / să-i trimită trandafirii astăzi. Vreau să i-i trimită astăzi.
- indirect object 3rd pers. sing., masc. and fem. (*îi*) + direct object fem. / neuter pl. (*le*)
Vreau să îi / să-i trimită garoafele / pachetele astăzi. Vreau să i le trimită astăzi.
- indirect object 1st pers. pl. (*ne*) + direct object masc. / neuter sing. (*îl*)
Vreau să ne trimită trandafirul / pachetul astăzi. Vreau să ni-l trimită astăzi.

- indirect object 1st pers. pl. (*ne*) + direct object fem. sing. (*o*)

Vreau să ne trimită garoafa astăzi. Vreau să ne-o trimită astăzi.

- indirect object 1st pers. pl. (*ne*) + direct object masc. pl. (*îi*)

Vreau să ne trimită trandafirii astăzi. Vreau să ni-i trimită astăzi.

- indirect object 1st pers. pl. (*ne*) + direct object fem. / neuter pl. (*le*)

Vreau să ne trimită garoafele / pachetele astăzi. Vreau să ni le trimită astăzi.

- indirect object 2nd pers. pl. (*vă*) + direct object masc. / neuter sing. (*îl*)

Vreau să vă trimită trandafirul / pachetul astăzi. Vreau să vi-l trimită astăzi.

- indirect object 2nd pers. pl. (*vă*) + direct object fem. sing. (*o*)

Vreau să vă trimită garoafa astăzi. Vreau să v-o trimită astăzi.

- indirect object 2nd pers. pl. (*vă*) + direct object masc. pl. (*îi*)

Vreau să vă trimită trandafirii astăzi. Vreau să vi-i trimită astăzi.

- indirect object 2nd pers. pl. (*vă*) + direct object fem. / neuter pl. (*le*)

Vreau să vă trimită garoafele / pachetele astăzi. Vreau să vi le trimită astăzi.

- indirect object 3rd pers. pl., masc. and fem. (*le*) + direct object masc. / neuter sing. (*îl*)

Vreau să le trimită trandafirul / pachetul astăzi. Vreau să li-l trimită astăzi.

- indirect object 3rd pers. pl., masc. and fem. (*le*) + direct object fem. sing. (*o*)

Vreau să le trimită garoafa astăzi. Vreau să le-o trimită astăzi.

- indirect object 3rd pers. pl., masc. and fem. (*le*) + direct object masc. pl. (*îi*)

Vreau să le trimită trandafirii astăzi. Vreau să li-i trimită astăzi.

- indirect object 3rd pers. pl., masc. and fem. (*le*) + direct object fem. / neuter pl. (*le*)

Vreau să le trimită garoafele / pachetele astăzi. Vreau să li le trimită astăzi.

3.4.2. Pronouns of politeness

3.4.2.1. The nominative case of the pronouns of politeness

Romanian has pronouns expressing politeness:

tu – *dumneata* [*mata*] – *dumneavoastră* you (singular)

el – *dânsul* – *dumnealui* – *domnia sa* he

ea – *dânsa* – *dumneaei* – *domnia sa* she

voi – *dumneavoastră* you (plural)

ei – *dânșii* – *dumnealor* – *domniile lor* they (plural, masculine)

ele – *dânsele* – *dumnealor* – *domniile lor* they (plural, feminine)

Latin did not have a special pronoun for politeness. However, the Romance languages developed specialized forms of expressing politeness through pronouns. Romanian has some unique features with respect to this:

1. The existence of several degrees of politeness: *tu* you – *dumneata* [*mata*] you (polite, not very formal) – *dumneavoastră* you (very polite, very formal). Between the informal familiar pronoun *tu* and the very formal and polite *dumneavoastră*, there is *dumneata*, with its colloquial variant – *mata*. *Dumneata* is more polite than *tu* but less polite than *dumneavoastră*.

The pronoun *dumneavoastră* is followed by the 2nd person plural of the verb:

— *Dumneavoastră sunteți din Statele Unite?* — Are you from the United States?

The pronoun *dumneata* [*mata*] is followed, like the informal pronoun *tu*, by the 2nd person singular of the verb:

— *Dumneata ești american?* Are you an American? — *Tu ești american?* — Are you an American?

<i>tu</i>	<i>dumneata</i> (abbrev. <i>d-ta</i>)	<i>dumneavoastră</i> (abbrev. <i>dvs., dv., d-voastră</i>)
– familiar – informal – same social position or inferior social position – used when addressing God and holy creatures	– polite, but rather familiar – can be used by an elder person addressing a younger person – can be used by a young person addressing an elder relative – used instead of <i>tu</i> in order to indicate a certain distance between the interlocutors is intended to be pointed out	– very polite and formal – used when addressing a person in a superior social position – used when addressing older persons (formal or very formal) – used when addressing totally unknown people

2. The polite pronoun for the 3rd person

Romanian allows for the possibility of expressing special deference when speaking about a person. So, the difference between *El e din Anglia.* He is from England.; *Ei sunt din Anglia.* They are from England., on one hand, and *Dânsul e din Anglia. / Dumnealui e din Anglia.* He is from England.; *Dumnealor sunt din Anglia.* They are from England., on the other hand, is a difference of degree of respect and consideration shown to those who are the subject of the discourse. The most polite form of talking about a third person or group of persons implies the usage of a noun + possessive pronoun construction: *domnia sa, domniile lor.* These constructions are used when talking about people who have a very high social position:

La conferința de presă președintele Bush a vorbit despre lupta împotriva terorismului. Domnia sa a subliniat importanța colaborării internaționale în acest domeniu. At the press conference President Bush spoke about the fight against terrorism. He pointed out the importance of the international cooperation in this field.

3.4.2.2. Declension of the pronouns of politeness

The pronouns of politeness *dumneavoastră, dumnealui, dumneaei* and *dumnealor* do not have case forms. The pronoun *dumneata* that has a genitive-dative form *dumitale*. The genitive-dative of *domnia sa* is *domniei sale*, and of *domniile lor* – *domniilor lor*. The pronouns *dânsul, dânsa, dânsii* and *dânsele* decline as follows :

N.-A.	<i>dânsul</i>	<i>dânsa</i>	<i>dânsii</i>	<i>dânsele</i>
G.-D.	<i>dânsului</i>	<i>dânsei</i>	<i>dânsilor</i>	<i>dânselor</i>

The case functions are the same as for the noun:

Fratele dumneavoastră / dumitale / dumnealui locuiește tot aici? Does your / his brother still live here? (genitive)

Pe dumneavoastră v-am văzut ieri la concert, pe dumnealor nu i-am văzut. I saw you at the concert yesterday, but I did not see them. (accusative)

Vă dau dumneavoastră dicționarele, nu i le dau dumnealui, pentru că nu știu dacă mâine va veni sau nu la cursuri. I will give you the dictionaries, I will not give them to him, because I don't know if he's coming to class tomorrow. (dative)

It is important to notice that when double expression of the object is necessary, the polite pronouns function with the correlative unstressed forms of the personal pronoun:

accusative		dative	
<i>pe dumneavoastră</i>	<i>vă</i>	<i>dumneavoastră</i>	<i>vă</i>
<i>pe dumneata</i>	<i>te</i>	<i>dumitale</i>	<i>îți</i>
<i>pe dumnealui, pe dânsul</i>	<i>îl</i>	<i>dumnealui, dânsului</i>	<i>îi</i>
<i>pe dumneaei, pe dânsa</i>	<i>o</i>	<i>dumneaei, dânzei</i>	
<i>pe dumnealor, pe dâșii</i>	<i>îi</i>	<i>dumnealor, dâșilor / dânselor</i>	<i>le</i>
<i>pe dumnealor, pe dânzele</i>	<i>le</i>		

Examples :

Pe dumneavoastră vă văd în fiecare zi. I see you every day.

Pe dumneata nu te văd niciodată. I never see you.

Pe dumnealor îi invităm sau nu? Will we invite them or not?

Dumneavoastră vă trimit invitațiile prin poștă. I will send you the invitations by mail.

I-am dat dumnealui cărțile iar dumneaei rechizitele. I gave you the books, and I gave her the office supplies.

Le-ați oferit și dumnealor ceva de mâncare? Did you offer them something to eat?

3.4.3. Reflexive pronouns

3.4.3.1. Clitic forms of the reflexive pronouns

Some Romanian verbs include in their structure a pronoun, called reflexive pronoun, when the subject of these verbs and their object (direct or indirect) are the same, i.e. the action is subject-oriented. These verbs are called reflexive verbs. There are two sets of reflexive pronouns, one in the accusative, and one in the dative :

accusative			
	1 st person	2 nd person	3 rd person
singular	<i>mă, -mă, m-, -m-</i>	<i>te, -te, te-, -te-</i>	<i>se, -se, s-, -s-</i>
plural	<i>ne, -ne, ne-, -ne-</i>	<i>vă, -vă, v-, -v-</i>	
dative			
	1 st person	2 nd person	3 rd person
singular	<i>îmi, -mi, mi-, -mi-</i>	<i>îți, -ți, ți-, -ți-</i>	<i>își, -și, și-, -și-</i>
plural	<i>ne, -ne, ne-, -ne-, ni, ni-</i>	<i>vă, -vă, v-, -v-, vi, vi-</i>	

- the 1st and the 2nd persons of the reflexive pronouns are identical to the short unstressed forms of the personal pronoun in the accusative or dative
- the 3rd person is different
- there is one form for the accusative singular and plural, masculine and feminine (*se*), and one form for dative singular and plural, masculine and feminine (*își*)

3.4.3.2. The long form of the reflexive pronoun

Besides the clitic forms used with the reflexive verbs, there is a full reflexive pronoun for the 3rd person: ***(pe) sine*** (accusative, feminine and masculine, singular and plural), and ***sieși*** (dative, feminine and masculine, singular and plural). These forms are used with different prepositions and their English equivalents will be ***himself, herself,***

themselves: pentru sine for himself, herself, themselves, **despre sine** about himself, herself, themselves, **grație sieși** thanks to himself, herself, themselves. These long forms of the reflexive pronouns can replace the pronouns of reinforcement in the accusative or dative:

Nu se gândește decât la ea însăși. ~ *Nu se gândește decât la sine.* She only thinks about herself.

The long reflexive pronouns appear in set phrases like: **în sinea mea, ta**, etc. in my mind; **în sine** in itself, *per se*. (**lucrul în sine** the thing in itself, **problema în sine** the problem in itself, **prostia lui în sine** his stupidity as such, etc.):

3.4.4. Pronouns of reinforcement

The English equivalent of the pronouns of reinforcement are: **(me) myself, (you) yourself, (he) himself**, etc. The pronouns of reinforcement usually come after stressed personal pronouns. They can also come after the stressed form of the reflexive pronoun, as well as after pronouns of politeness. The 3rd person of the pronouns of reinforcement can also modify a noun (they can precede or follow the noun).

The function of the pronoun of reinforcement is to intensify the identification of the reinforced pronoun or noun. The pronoun of reinforcement agrees in gender, number and case with the personal pronoun or the noun it modifies:

Am adus eu însumi cererea la secretariat. I've brought the application form in person to the registrar's.

Mi-a spus ea însăși că vine mâine, nu poimâine. She herself told me that she would come tomorrow, not the day after tomorrow.

Studentii au convenit cu rectorul însuși să încheie cursurile cu o zi mai devreme. The students agreed with the president himself to end classes one day earlier.

The forms of the pronoun of reinforcement are:

1st person

	singular		plural	
	masculine	feminine	masculine	feminine
N.	<i>eu însumi</i>	<i>eu însămi</i>	<i>noi înșine</i>	<i>noi însene</i>
G.	—	—	—	—
D.	<i>mie însumi</i>	<i>mie însămi</i>	<i>nouă înșine</i>	<i>nouă însene</i>
Ac.	<i>pe mine însumi</i>	<i>pe mine însămi</i>	<i>pe noi înșine</i>	<i>pe noi însene</i>

2nd person

	singular		plural	
	masculine	feminine	masculine	feminine
N.	<i>tu însuți</i>	<i>tu însăți</i>	<i>voi înșivă</i>	<i>voi însevă</i>
G.	<i>al d-tale însuți</i>	<i>al d-tale însăți</i>	<i>al d-stră înșivă</i>	<i>al d-stră însevă</i>
D.	<i>ție însuți</i>	<i>ție însăți</i>	<i>vouă înșivă</i>	<i>vouă însevă</i>
Ac.	<i>pe tine însuți</i>	<i>pe tine însăți</i>	<i>pe voi înșivă</i>	<i>pe voi însevă</i>

3rd person

	singular		plural	
	masculine	feminine	masculine	feminine
N.	<i>el însuși</i>	<i>ea însăși</i>	<i>ei înșiși</i>	<i>ele însele</i>
G.	<i>al lui însuși</i>	<i>al ei înseși</i>	<i>al lor înșiși</i>	<i>al lor însele / înselelor</i>
D.	<i>lui însuși</i>	<i>ei înseși</i>	<i>lor înșiși</i>	<i>lor însele / înselelor</i>
Ac.	<i>pe el însuși</i>	<i>pe ea însăși</i>	<i>pe ei înșiși</i>	<i>pe ele însele</i>

- the actual pronoun of reinforcement (*însuși*, *însuși*, etc.) has identical forms for all the cases within the same person, gender and number
- the only feminine singular pronoun of reinforcement that has a different form for the genitive-dative is the feminine singular of the 3rd person. An alternative form also exists in the genitive-dative feminine plural.

3.4.5. Possessive pronouns and pronominal adjectives

3.4.5.1. The possessive pronominal adjectives in the nominative-accusative case

		singular (the object owned)		plural (the object owned)	
		masculine and neuter	feminine	masculine	feminine and neuter
1 st	sing. 'my'	<i>meu</i>	<i>mea</i>	<i>mei</i>	<i>mele</i>
	pl. 'our'	<i>nostru</i>	<i>noastră</i>	<i>noștri</i>	<i>noastre</i>
2 nd	sing. 'your'	<i>tău</i>	<i>ta</i>	<i>tăi</i>	<i>tale</i>
	pl. 'your'	<i>vostru</i>	<i>voastră</i>	<i>voștri</i>	<i>voastre</i>
3 rd	sing. 'his', 'her'	<i>său</i>	<i>sa</i>	<i>săi</i>	<i>sale</i>
	pl. 'their'	—	—	—	—
3 rd	sing. 'his'	personal pronoun <i>el</i> in the genitive: <i>lui</i>			
	sing. 'her'	personal pronoun <i>ea</i> in the genitive: <i>ei</i>			
	pl. 'their'	personal pronoun <i>ei / ele</i> in the genitive: <i>lor</i>			

The possessive adjective takes the gender and the number of the noun it modifies: *fiul meu* my son, *fiica mea* my daughter, *fiii mei* my sons, *fiicele tale* your daughters, etc. It is placed after the modified noun. In contrast with English, the noun followed by a possessive adjective takes the definite article: *soția mea* my wife, *soțul meu* my husband, *scaunele noastre* our chairs, etc.

For the 3rd person, the possessive adjective has forms only for the singular (one possessor only): *său*, *sa*, *săi*, *sale*. In the plural, the genitive personal pronoun *lor* is used throughout:

Frații noștri sunt studenți, frații lor sunt elevi. Our brothers are college students, their brothers are school students.

Surorile noastre sunt studente, surorile lor sunt eleve. Our sisters are college students, their brothers are school students.

In general, the forms *său*, *sa*, *săi*, *sale* are rarely used and are replaced by the genitive forms of the personal pronoun *lui* and *ei*:

Fratele meu este student, fratele lui este elev. My brother is a college student, his brother is a school student.

Fratele ei are doar 4 ani. Her brother is only 4 years old.

The forms *său*, *sa*, *săi*, *sale* are preferred when the possessed object belongs to the subject of the sentence :

Eu vorbesc cu prietenul lui. I speak with his friend.

El vorbește cu prietenul lui. He speaks with his friend (his own or someone other's friend).

El vorbește cu prietenul său. He speaks with his friend (his own friend).

The pronouns of politeness in the genitive will replace the possessive pronouns *tău*, *ta*, *tăi*, *tale*, *vostru*, *voastră*, *voștri*, *voastre* or the personal pronouns on the genitive (3rd person) in formal addressing to other people : *prietenul dumneavoastră* your friend, *prietenii dumneavoastră* your friends, *prietenii dumnealui* his friends, etc.

3.4.5.2. The possessive pronouns in the nominative-accusative case

The possessive pronouns are identical to the possessive adjectives, but in order to function as pronouns they take the possessive or genitival article: *al meu*, *a mea*, *ai mei*, *ale mele*, *al tău*, *a ta*, *ai tăi*, *ale tale*, etc. The possessive or genitival article will take the gender and the number of the noun that designates the object(s) owned: *un frate al meu*

one brother of mine, ***o soră a mea*** one sister of mine, ***doi frați ai mei*** two brothers of mine, ***două surori ale mele*** two sisters of mine; ***un frate al lui*** one brother of his, ***o soră a lui*** one sister of his, ***doi frați ai lui*** two brothers of his, ***două surori ale lui*** two sisters of his, etc.

The possessive article precedes a possessive adjective, transforming it into a pronoun, when:

- the possessive is independent:
 - ***Ale cui sunt cărțile de aici?*** Whose are the books over here?
 - ***Ale noastre.*** Ours.
- the noun modified by the pronoun takes the indefinite article ***un, o, niște***:
 - ***Cartea de pe masă e cartea lui?*** Is the book on the table his?
 - ***Da, e cartea lui.*** Yes, this is his book.,
but
 - ***Ce carte e pe masă?*** What book is on the table?
 - ***O carte a lui.*** A book of his.
- the noun modified by the pronoun is not immediately followed by the pronoun, but there are other modifiers between them:
 - Pe masă sunt cărțile mele.*** My books are on the table.
but
 - Pe masă sunt cărțile vechi ale mele.*** My old books are on the table.
- the noun modified by the pronoun has two or more possessive modifiers and the pronouns are on the second, third, etc. position:
 - Cărțile mele și ale lui sunt pe masă.*** My books and his are on the table.
- the possessive pronoun functions as a nominal part in the predicate:
 - Aici este cartea lui.*** His book is here.
but
 - Cartea de aici este a lui.*** The book over here is his.

The independent possessive pronouns can have the meaning 'my / your / his, etc. family / folks':

- ***Ai mei sunt acasă. Ai tăi unde sunt?*** My folks are at home. Where are your folks?
- ***Ai mei sunt în Germania.*** My parents are in Germany.

3.4.5.3. The declension of the possessive pronominal adjectives

The declension pattern of the possessive adjectives follows the general rule of adjectival declension. Thus, only the feminine possessive adjectives in the singular will change in the genitive-dative, and the genitive-dative singular forms will be identical to all the plural forms:

meu, mea, mei, mele

		singular	
		masculine and neuter	feminine
N.-A.	<i>Acesta este prietenul meu.</i>		<i>Aceasta este prietena mea.</i>
G.-D.	<i>Acesta este tatăl prietenului meu.</i>		<i>Acesta este tatăl prietenei mele.</i>
		plural	
		masculine	feminine and neuter
N.-A.	<i>Aceștia sunt prietenii mei.</i>		<i>Acestea sunt prietenele mele.</i>
G.-D.	<i>Acesta este tatăl prietenilor mei.</i>		<i>Acesta este tatăl prietenelor mele.</i>

tău, ta, tăi, tale

		singular	
		masculine and neuter	feminine
N.-A.	<i>Acesta este prietenul tău.</i>		<i>Aceasta este prietena ta.</i>
G.-D.	<i>Acesta este tatăl prietenului tău.</i>		<i>Acesta este tatăl prietenei tale.</i>
		plural	
		masculine	feminine and neuter
N.-A.	<i>Aceștia sunt prietenii tăi.</i>		<i>Acestea sunt prietenele tale.</i>
G.-D.	<i>Acesta este tatăl prietenilor tăi.</i>		<i>Acesta este tatăl prietenelor tale.</i>

nostru, noastră, noștri, noastre

		singular	
		masculine and neuter	feminine
N.-A.	<i>Acesta este prietenul nostru.</i>		<i>Aceasta este prietena noastră.</i>
G.-D.	<i>Acesta este tatăl prietenului nostru.</i>		<i>Acesta este tatăl prietenei noastre.</i>
		plural	
		masculine	feminine and neuter
N.-A.	<i>Aceștia sunt prietenii noștri.</i>		<i>Acestea sunt prietenele noastre.</i>
G.-D.	<i>Acesta este tatăl prietenilor noștri.</i>		<i>Acesta este tatăl prietenelor noastre.</i>

vostru, voastră, voștri, voastre

		singular	
		masculine + neuter	feminine
N.-A.	<i>Acesta este prietenul vostru.</i>		<i>Aceasta este prietena voastră.</i>
G.-D.	<i>Acesta este tatăl prietenului vostru.</i>		<i>Acesta este tatăl prietenei voastre.</i>
		plural	
		masculine	feminine and neuter
N.-A.	<i>Aceștia sunt prietenii voștri.</i>		<i>Acestea sunt prietenele voastre.</i>
G.-D.	<i>Acesta este tatăl prietenilor voștri.</i>		<i>Acesta este tatăl prietenelor voastre.</i>

său, sa, săi, sale

		singular	
		masculine and neuter	feminine
N.-A.	<i>Acesta este prietenul său.</i>		<i>Aceasta este prietena sa.</i>
G.-D.	<i>Acesta este tatăl prietenului său.</i>		<i>Acesta este tatăl prietenei sale.</i>
		plural	
		masculine	feminine and neuter
N.-A.	<i>Aceștia sunt prietenii săi.</i>		<i>Acestea sunt prietenele sale.</i>
G.-D.	<i>Acesta este tatăl prietenilor săi.</i>		<i>Acesta este tatăl prietenelor sale.</i>

If the possessor is in the third person, the personal pronouns in the genitive *lui, ei, lor* are frequently used instead of the possessive adjective. The personal pronouns *lui, ei, lor* are invariable:

lui

		singular	
		masculine and neuter	feminine
N.-A.	<i>Acesta este prietenul lui.</i>		<i>Aceasta este prietena lui.</i>
G.-D.	<i>Acesta este tatăl prietenului lui.</i>		<i>Acesta este tatăl prietenei lui.</i>
		plural	
		masculine	feminine and neuter
N.-A.	<i>Aceștia sunt prietenii lui.</i>		<i>Acestea sunt prietenele lui.</i>
G.-D.	<i>Acesta este tatăl prietenilor lui.</i>		<i>Acesta este tatăl prietenelor lui.</i>

ei

		singular	
		masculine and neuter	feminine
N.-A.	<i>Acesta este prietenul ei.</i>		<i>Aceasta este prietena ei.</i>
G.-D.	<i>Acesta este tatăl prietenului ei.</i>		<i>Acesta este tatăl prietenei ei.</i>
		plural	
		masculine	feminine and neuter
N.-A.	<i>Aceștia sunt prietenii ei.</i>		<i>Acestea sunt prietenele ei.</i>
G.-D.	<i>Acesta este tatăl prietenilor ei.</i>		<i>Acesta este tatăl prietenelor ei.</i>

lor

		singular	
		masculine and neuter	feminine
N.-A.	<i>Acesta este prietenul lor.</i>		<i>Aceasta este prietena lor.</i>
G.-D.	<i>Acesta este tatăl prietenului lor.</i>		<i>Acesta este tatăl prietenei lor.</i>
		plural	
		masculine	feminine and neuter
N.-A.	<i>Aceștia sunt prietenii lor.</i>		<i>Acestea sunt prietenele lor.</i>
G.-D.	<i>Acesta este tatăl prietenilor lor.</i>		<i>Acesta este tatăl prietenelor lor.</i>

3.4.5.4. The possessive value of the unstressed personal and reflexive pronouns in the dative

Unstressed personal and reflexive pronouns in the dative can have possessive meaning in Romanian. The possessive meaning is obvious when such a pronoun modifies a noun. In contemporary Romanian the noun can be only in the nominative or in the accusative. The nominal structures including a "possessive dative" are typical of poetic texts:

"Iară sufletu-mi se pierde / După chipul tău frumos." (Mihai Eminescu) And my soul is yearning for your lovely face. (*sufletu-mi* = *sufletul meu*)

"Eu strâng la piept averea-mi de amor și frumuseți." (Mihai Eminescu) I embrace my fortune made of love and beauties. (*averea-mi* = *averea mea*)

In contemporary standard speech, structures including an unstressed personal or reflexive pronoun with possessive value joined with a verb are very common:

"Copilo, pune-ți mâinile pe genunchii mei." (Lucian Blaga) Child, put your hands on my knees. (*pune-ți mâinile* = *pune mâinile tale*)

Diseară îmi vizitez bunicii. = *Diseară îi vizitez pe bunicii mei.* I'm visiting my grandparents tonight.

— *I-ai luat tu bicicleta?* = — *Ai luat tu bicicleta ei/lui?* Did you take her / his bike?

— *Li s-au întors părinții din America?* = — *S-au întors părinții lor din America?* Have their parents come back from America?

Si-a anunțat profesorul că mâine nu va fi aici. = *L-a anunțat pe profesorul său că mâine nu va fi aici.* He / she told his / her teacher that he / she would not be here tomorrow.

— *Ti-ai luat medicamentele?* = *— *Ai luat medicamentele tale?* Did you take your medication?

Mi-am uitat ceasul acasă. = **Am uitat ceasul meu acasă.* I forgot my watch at home.

— *V-ați scris tema?* = *— *Ați scris tema voastră?* Did you write your homework?

In theory, the structures with the "possessive dative" can be replaced with structures with possessive pronouns. In fact, the former are more frequent in standard speech, while the latter are less common. Many times this replacement is not even accepted, like in the examples preceded by an asterisk (*).

3.4.6. Demonstrative pronouns and pronominal adjectives

The demonstrative pronouns of proximity and remoteness are noun substitutes or modifiers that mainly indicate a space relationship. They can also indicate proximity / remoteness in time. There are also two series of demonstrative pronouns and adjectives : the demonstratives of identification, and the demonstratives of differentiation.

3.4.6.1. The demonstrative pronouns of proximity and remoteness in the nominative case

The demonstrative pronouns of proximity are deictics indicating objects located in a relatively close area, "here". The nominative case forms of the demonstrative pronouns of proximity are :

	masculine	neuter	feminine
singular	<i>acesta</i> [ăsta]		<i>aceasta</i> [asta]
plural	<i>aceștia</i> [ăștia]	<i>acestea</i> [astea]	

- besides the literary, formal and stylistically neutral forms *acesta*, *aceasta*, *aceștia*, *acestea* [this (one), these (ones)] there is a series of colloquial forms (very frequent in actual speech) – *ăsta*, *asta*, *aștia*, *astea*:

— *Cine este acesta?* — *Cine e ăsta?* Who is this?

The feminine singular demonstrative pronoun of proximity *aceasta* [asta] may have an indefinite value, meaning 'this fact / situation / thing':

Am spus aceasta pentru că te iubesc. I said this because I love you.

Asta nu e treaba ta! This is none of your business!

Asta este! This is it! What can we do?

Asta nu e treaba ta! This is none of your business!

Asta-i bună! Well, that's something! (intonation can change the meaning of this phrase, from expressing pleasant surprise or interest to indignation)

3.4.6.2. The demonstrative pronouns of remoteness in the nominative case

The demonstrative pronouns of remoteness are deictics that indicate an object located in a relatively remote area, "there". The nominative case forms of the demonstrative pronouns of remoteness are:

	masculine	neuter	feminine
singular	<i>acela</i> [ăla]		<i>aceea</i> [aia]
plural	<i>aceia</i> [ăia]	<i>acelea</i> [alea]	

- besides the literary, formal and stylistically neutral forms *acela*, *aceea*, *aceia*, *acelea* [that (one), those (ones)], there is a series of parallel colloquial forms (very frequent in common speech) – *ăla*, *aia*, *ăia*, *alea*:

— *Cine este acela?* — *Cine e ăla?* Who is that?

When followed by a modifier, the demonstrative pronouns of remoteness may have the forms *cel, cea, cei, cele*:

acela de lângă tine – cel de lângă tine the one (m.) beside you

aceea de acolo – cea de acolo the one (f.) over there

aceia care stau acasă – cei care stau acasă those (m.) who stay home

acelea care parchează mașina – cele care parchează mașina those (f.) who are parking the car

The feminine form *aceea* can have indefinite value: *de aceea* that's why.

3.4.6.3. The demonstrative pronominal adjectives of proximity and remoteness

	masculine	neuter	feminine
singular	<i>acest / acesta</i> [ăsta] <i>acel / acela</i> [ăla]		<i>această / aceasta</i> [asta] <i>acea / aceea</i> [aia]
plural	<i>acești / aceștia</i> [ăștia] <i>acei / aceia</i> [ăia]	<i>aceste / acestea</i> [astea] <i>acele / acelea</i> [alea]	

When modifying a noun, the demonstratives function as adjectives. The demonstrative pronominal adjectives of proximity and remoteness can be positioned before the noun they modify (pre-position) or after the noun (post-position). The demonstratives of proximity and remoteness have different forms if placed in pre-position or in post-position. The colloquial forms are not used in pre-position:

<i>acest student</i>	but	<i>studentul acesta</i> [ăsta]
<i>această studentă</i>	but	<i>studenta aceasta</i> [asta]
<i>acești studenți</i>	but	<i>studenții aceștia</i> [ăștia]
<i>aceste studente</i>	but	<i>studentele acestea</i> [astea]
<i>acel student</i>	but	<i>studentul acela</i> [ăla]
<i>acea studentă</i>	but	<i>studenta aceea</i> [aia]
<i>acei studenți</i>	but	<i>studenții aceia</i> [ăia]
<i>acele studente</i>	but	<i>studentele acelea</i> [alea]

The adjectives placed in post-position are identical to the pronouns:

Acesta este un student american. (pronoun) This is an American student.

Studentul acesta este american. (adjective) This student is an American.

When the demonstrative adjectives function in pre-position, the modified nouns do not take an article: *acest student, acea întâmplare*. When the demonstrative adjective function in post-position, the modified nouns take the definite article: *studentul acesta, întâmplarea aceea*.

3.4.6.4. The declension of the demonstrative pronouns / pronominal adjectives of proximity and remoteness

The declension of the demonstrative pronouns / pronominal adjectives of proximity and remoteness follows the general declension pattern of the nominals. The accusative is in form identical to the nominative, and the genitive is identical to the dative. Below are the complete paradigms of the demonstrative pronouns / pronominal adjectives of proximity and remoteness.

The demonstratives of proximity:

	singular		plural	
	masculine and neuter	feminine	masculine	feminine and neuter
N. – A.	acest(a) ăsta	această/a asta	acești(a) ăștia	aceste(a) astea
G. – D.	acestui(a) ăstuia	acestei(a) ăsteia	acestor(a) ăștora	

The demonstratives of remoteness:

	singular		plural	
	masculine and neuter	feminine	masculine	feminine and neuter
N. – A.	acel(a) ăla	acea / aceea aia	acei(a) ăia	acele(a) alea
G. – D.	acelui(a) ăluia	acelei(a) ăleia	acelor(a) ălora	

- besides the literary, formal and stylistically neutral demonstrative adjectives *acesta*, *aceasta*, *acela*, *aceea*, etc., there are the colloquial demonstrative adjectives *ăsta*, *asta*, *ăla*, *aia*, etc. They also have different forms for the genitive-dative. When used as pronominal adjectives, these colloquial forms never precede the noun they modify.

The demonstrative adjectives placed in post-position are identical in form to the demonstrative pronouns:

Acesta este un student american. This is an American student. (pronoun, masculine nominative singular)

Studentul acesta este american. This student is American. (adjective, masculine nominative singular)

Cărțile sunt ale acesteia. The books belong to this one. (pronoun, feminine genitive singular)

Cărțile sunt ale studentei acesteia. The books belong to this student. (adjective, feminine genitive singular)

Le-am arătat acestora materialele. I showed the materials to these ones. (pronoun, masculine/feminine dative plural)

Le-am arătat studenților acestora materialele. I showed the materials to these students. (adjective, masculine dative plural)

The demonstrative adjectives in pre-position differ from the demonstrative adjectives in post-position (they lose the final *-a*):

Studentul acesta este american. but **Acest student este american.** This student is American.

Cărțile sunt ale studentei acesteia. but **Cărțile sunt ale acestei studente.** The books belong to this student.

Le-am arătat studenților acestora materialele. but **Le-am arătat acestor studenți materialele.** I showed the materials to these students.

The noun followed by a demonstrative pronominal adjective always takes the definite article. The nouns preceded by the demonstrative pronominal adjective do not take an article. The demonstrative adjectives take the gender, number and case of the nouns they modify.

In the accusative case, when used as a direct object, the structure **noun + demonstrative adjective** functions according to the general rule (names of objects without the preposition *pe*; names of persons preceded by the preposition *pe*, double expression of the direct object when necessary):

— **Vreau creionul acela. Da, da, vreau acel creion.** I want that pencil over there. Yes, I want that pencil.

— **Pe studentul acesta îl cunosc. Da, da, îl cunosc pe acest student.** I know this student. Yes, I know this student.

The demonstrative pronouns in the accusative are used with the preposition *pe*, regardless of whether they refer to a personal or a non-personal noun:

- *Vreau creionul acesta.* I want this pencil.— *Pe acesta?* This one?— *Nu, pe acela! Îl vreau pe acela!* No, that one! I want that one!
 — *Îl știu pe studentul acesta.* I know this student.— *Pe acesta?* This one?— *Nu, pe acela. Îl știu pe acela!* No, that one. I know that one!

In the genitive, the independent **demonstrative pronouns**, as well as the structure **noun + demonstrative adjective** used independently or in a position remote to the modified noun, are preceded by the possessive article *al, a, ai, ale*:

- *Cărțile studentului aceuia sunt aici?* Are the books belonging to that student here? — *Da, cărțile aceuia sunt aici.* Yes, the books of that one are here.
 — *Cărțile sunt ale studentului aceuia?* Do the books belong to that student? — *Da, sunt ale aceuia!* Yes, they are that one's.

When followed by a modifier, the demonstrative pronouns of remoteness may have the forms *cel / celui, cea / celei, cei / celor, cele / celor*: *acela de lângă tine – cel de lângă tine* that one next to you; *aceea de acolo – cea de acolo* that one over there; *aceia care vor veni – cei care vor veni* those who will come; *acelea care au sunat – cele care au sunat* those who called. The meaning of remoteness in such situations is lost, and the demonstratives act as simple noun substitutes:

Acela de lângă Andrei este fratele meu. ↔ *Cel de lângă Andrei este fratele meu.* The one next to Andrei is my brother.

Astea sunt cărțile aceuia de lângă tine. ↔ *Astea sunt cărțile celui de lângă tine.* These are the books of the one next to you.

Organizatorii au oferit diplome aceloră din Argentina. ↔ *Organizatorii au oferit diplome celor din Argentina.* The organizers offered flowers to those who are from Argentina.

3.4.6.5. The demonstrative pronouns and pronominal adjectives of differentiation and identification

There are two more demonstrative pronouns / adjectives in Romanian: a demonstrative of differentiation (*celălălat* the other, the other one) and a demonstrative of identification (*același* the same, the same one).

3.4.6.5.1. The demonstratives of differentiation

	singular		plural	
	masculine and neuter	feminine	masculine	feminine and neuter
N. – A.	<i>celălalt</i>	<i>cealaltă</i>	<i>ceialți</i>	<i>celelalte</i>
G. – D.	<i>celuilalt</i>	<i>celeilalte</i>	<i>celorlalti</i>	<i>celorlalte</i>

The pronouns and the adjectives (in pre-position or post-position) of differentiation have identical forms:

- *Unde e celălalt?* Where is the other one? — *Unde e studentul celălalt?* Where is the other student? *Da, unde e celălalt student?* Yes, where is the other student?
 — *I-am oferit florile celeilalte delegate!* I gave the flowers to the other delegate. — *I le-ai oferit delegatei celeilalte?* Did you offer them to the other delegate? — *Da, celeilalte!* Yes, to the other one!

When the demonstrative adjective *celălalt* is used in post-position, the modified noun takes the definite article; when this adjective is used in pre-position, the noun does not take an article:

- *Unde este studentul celălalt?* — *Unde este celălalt student?* Where is the other student?
 — *I-am dat florile delegatei celeilalte.* — *I-am dat florile celeilalte delegate.* I gave the flowers to the other delegate.

In the accusative, when used as a direct object, the structure **noun + demonstrative pronoun of differentiation** functions according to the common rule (names of objects without the preposition *pe*; names of persons preceded by the preposition *pe*, double expression of the direct object when necessary):

- *Vreau creionul celălalt. Da, da, vreau celălalt creion.* I want the other pencil. Yes, I want the other pencil.
- *Pe studentul celălalt îl știu. Da, da, îl știu pe celălalt student.* I know the other student, Yes, I know the other student.

The **demonstrative pronouns of differentiation** in the accusative are used with the preposition *pe*, regardless of whether they refer to persons or objects:

- *Vreau creionul celălalt.* I want the other pencil. — *Pe acesta?* This one? — *Nu, pe celălalt! Îl vreau pe celălalt!* — No, the other one. I want the other one.
- *Îl știu pe studentul celălalt.* I know the other student. — *Pe acesta?* This one? — *Nu, pe celălalt! Pe celălalt îl știu!* No, the other one. I know the other one.

In the genitive, the independent or remote **demonstrative pronoun of differentiation** and the independent or remote structure **noun + demonstrative adjective**, are preceded by the possessive article *al, a, ai, ale*:

- Cărțile studentului celuilalt sunt aici.* The books of the other student are here. *Cărțile celuilalt sunt aici.* The books of the other one are here.
- *Cărțile sunt ale studentului celuilalt?* Do the books belong to the other student? — *Da, sunt ale celuilalt!* Yes, they belong to the other one!

3.4.6.5.2. The demonstratives of identification

	singular		plural	
	masculine	feminine	masculine	feminine
N. – A.	<i>același</i>	<i>aceeași</i>	<i>aceiași</i>	<i>aceleași</i>
G. – D.	<i>aceluiași</i>	<i>aceleiași</i>	<i>acelorași</i>	

The pronouns and the pronominal adjectives of identification are identical in form:

Eu voi fi întotdeauna aceeași. I will always be the same.

Eu voi fi întotdeauna aceeași persoană veselă și calmă. I will always be the same cheerful and calm person.

- the adjective of identity **always** precedes the noun it modifies:

El este același om bun pe care l-am cunoscut cu ani în urmă. He is the same kind man I met yers ago.

Am dat flori aceluiași persoane. We gave flowers to the same people.

In the accusative, when used as a direct object, the structure **noun + demonstrative pronoun of identification** functions according to the common rule (names of objects without the preposition *pe*; names of persons preceded by the preposition *pe*, double expression of the direct object when necessary):

- *Vreau același creion.* I want the same pencil.
- *Îl văd zilnic pe același student.* I see the same student every day.

The **demonstrative pronouns of identification** in the accusative are used with the preposition *pe*, regardless their substituting names of persons or objects:

- *Vreau aceeași carte.* I want the same book. — *Pe aceasta?* — *Nu, pe aceeași de ieri! O vreau pe aceeași de ieri!* — This one? — No, I want the same I had yesterday. I want the same one.
- *O văd pe aceeași studentă.* I see the same student. — *Pe aceasta?* — *Nu, pe aceeași pe care am văzut-o ieri! O văd pe aceeași de ieri.* — This one? — No, the same one I saw yesterday. I see the same one.

In the genitive, the independent or remote **demonstrative pronoun of identification**, as well as the independent or remote structure **noun + demonstrative adjective**, are preceded by the possessive article *al, a, ai, ale*:

Lucrările aceluorași studenți sunt bune. The papers of the same students are good. ***Lucrările aceluorași sunt bune.***

The papers of the same ones are good.

— ***Lucrările sunt ale aceluorași studenți?*** Do the papers belong to the same students? — ***Da, sunt ale aceluorași!*** Yes the belong to the same ones.

3.4.7. Interrogative / relative pronouns and pronominal adjectives

3.4.7.1 Relative pronouns vs. interrogative pronouns

The interrogative pronouns are used in direct questions. The relative pronouns substitute a noun in non-interrogative subordinate clauses. Like the conjunctions, this type of pronouns is used to connect a main clause and its subordinate. Unlike the conjunctions, the relative pronouns also play a syntactic role in the subordinate.

Many relative pronouns are identical to the interrogatives (*cine* who, *ce* what, *care* which, *cât* how much), which is why they are often lumped together. However, there are some interrogative pronouns that cannot function as relative pronouns (*al câtelea* the question for asking about the order of units in a series), and also some relative pronouns that never work as interrogatives (the invariable pronoun *de*, a colloquial element with the same meaning as *care*, or the compound pronouns *cel ce* he who, the one who / that and *ceea ce* which). Furthermore, there are semantic and / or functional restrictions that differentiate the interrogative and relative pronouns which are identical in form. For instance:

- as an interrogative pronoun, *ce* what can only substitute inanimate nouns, but as a relative pronoun, as a synonym of *care*, it also replaces animate nouns:

Toți prietenii ce-au fost de față s-au bucurat pentru noi. All the friends who were there were happy for us.

- as interrogatives, both *ce* and *care* can take as a predicate only a verb in the 3rd person singular, while as relative pronouns they can combine with verbs in all persons, singular and plural:

Anii ce vor veni vor fi plini de bucurii. The years that will come will be joyfull.

Voi, care nu ne-ați abandonat, sunteți niște prieteni adevărați. You guys, who have not let us down, are true friends.

- in a subordinate clause, the interrogative pronoun takes the case requested by the structure of the subordinate, while the relative pronoun can also take a case requested by the structure of the main clause:

Mă întreb cui pot să povestesc ce s-a întâmplat. (interrogative pronoun *cine* in the dative required by the verb *a povesti* in the subordinate) I wonder to whom I can tell about what happened.

Am povestit ce s-a întâmplat cui a vrut să mă asculte. (relative pronoun *cine* in the dative required by the verb *a povesti* in the main clause) I told about what happened to those people who wanted to listen to me.

3.4.7.2. The interrogative pronouns *cine* and *ce* in the nominative

The interrogative pronoun *cine* who is a substitute for nouns designating persons. In the nominative case *cine* is always a pronoun, it is never used as an adjective. In the interrogative sentences the verb is always placed after the interrogative pronoun *cine*:

— ***Cine este acolo?*** Who is there?

— ***Acolo cine este?*** Who is there?

The interrogative pronoun *ce* what replaces nouns that designate things, actions, states. It is always invariable. In the interrogative sentences the verb is always placed after the interrogative pronoun *ce*:

— ***Ce este acolo?*** What is there?

— ***Acolo ce este?*** What is there?

Ce can function as a pronominal adjective. As an adjective, *ce* is used to form questions about the quality of a person or thing, corresponding to the English question 'What kind of...?'. In such questions, the construction

Ce fel de... is often preferred to *ce* as such:

- *Ce student e Radu?* What kind of a student is Radu?
- *Ce fel de student e Radu?* What kind of a student is Radu?

Ce is used in exclamations expressing personal impressions or opinions where 'what' or 'how' are used in English:

- *Ce zi minunată!* What a wonderful day!
- *Ce drăguț!* How nice!
- *Ce bine!* That's good! How good it is!
- *Ce interesant!* How interesting!
- *Ce groaznic!* How horrible!

3.4.7.3. The interrogative pronoun / pronominal adjective *care* in the nominative

The interrogative pronoun *care* which (one), who; that, who, which is a substitute for nouns designating persons, things, actions, states, etc. It indicates the speaker's desire to identify a particular object among similar objects:

Acolo sunt mulți studenți. Care este Alexandra din România? There are many students over there. Which one is Alexandra from Romania?

The interrogative pronoun *care* is often used in the structure: *care + dintre + noun / pronoun in the plural* with the meaning 'which (one) of':

- *Care dintre voi este român?* — Which (one) of you is Romanian?
- *Care dintre studenți e japonez și care e coreean?* — Which (one) of the students is Japanese and which one is Korean?

In the nominative–accusative *care* has one form for all genders and numbers. The same form *care* is used as a pronoun and as an adjective. The noun after the pronominal adjective *care* does not take an article:

- *Care este profesoara ta?* Which one is your teacher? (pron.)
- *Care este profesorul tău?* Which one is your professor?(pron.)
- *Care sunt profesorii lor?* Which ones are their professors? (pron.)
- *Care profesoară este din Franța?* Which professor (f.) is from France? (adj.)
- *Care profesori sunt din Danemarca?* Which professors (m.) are from Denmark?(adj.)

3.4.7.4. The declension of the interrogative pronouns / pronominal adjectives *cine*, *ce* and *care*

3.4.7.4.1. The interrogative pronoun *cine*

Below is the full paradigm of the interrogative pronoun *cine* who:

N. – A.	<i>cine</i>
G. – D.	<i>(al, a, ai, ale) cui</i>

In a sentence where the direct object with the preposition *pe* is expressed by the pronoun *cine* in the accusative, the double expression of the direct object is not necessary:

- *Pe cine ai invitat la cină?* Whom did you invite to dinner?

In a sentence where the indirect object is the pronoun *cine* in the dative, the double expression of the indirect object is possible, but not required. In general, the double expression is preferred in situations where the degree of indefiniteness is lower:

- *Cui ai oferit flori?* Who did you offer flowers to?
- *Cui i-ai dat florile?* Who did you give the flowers to?

In the genitive, the form *cui* is preceded by the possessive article *al, a, ai, ale*. However, if the form *cui* comes after the modified noun, it does not take the possessive article:

- *Al cui este creionul acesta?* Whose pencil is this?
- *A cui este cartea aceasta?* Whose book is this?
- *Ai cui sunt pantofii aceștia?* Whose shoes are these?
- *Ale cui flori sunt aici? Florile cui sunt aici?* Whose flowers are here?

3.4.7.4.2. The interrogative pronoun / pronominal adjective *ce*

The interrogative pronoun / pronominal adjective *ce* is invariable. It is practically used only in the nominative and accusative. The value of genitive can be expressed by using *ce* with the preposition *a (a ce?)*, however this structure is seldom used. *Ce* can be used both as a pronoun, and as a pronominal adjective.

In the accusative, when used as a direct object, *ce* does not take a preposition. When indicating a circumstance, it can be preceded by various lexical prepositions:

- *Ce ai cumpărat?* What did you buy ?
- *Ce carte ai cumpărat?* What book did you buy?
- *Cu ce te îmbraci diseară?* What are you wearing tonight?
- *Cu ce rochie te îmbraci diseară?* What dress are you wearing tonight?
- *Despre ce vorbiți?* What are you talking about?
- *Despre ce film vorbiți?* What movie are you talking about?

3.4.7.4.3. The interrogative pronoun / pronominal adjective *care*

Below is the full paradigm of the interrogative pronoun / pronominal adjective *care*:

		singular		plural	
		masculine	feminine	masculine	feminine
N.	pron. / adj.	<i>care</i>			
A.	pron. / adj.	<i>pe care / în care, pe care, la care, despre care, fără care</i> , etc.			
G.-D.	pronoun	<i>(al, a, ai, ale) căruia</i>	<i>(al, a, ai, ale) căreia</i>	<i>(al, a, ai, ale) căroră</i>	
	adjective	<i>(al, a, ai, ale) cărui</i>	<i>(al, a, ai, ale) cărei</i>	<i>(al, a, ai, ale) căror</i>	

- in the nominative-accusative singular and plural the interrogative pronoun / adjective *care* have only one form for all genders and numbers
- in the genitive-dative singular there are special forms for the two genders, while in the plural the gender opposition is not marked
- in the nominative-accusative the pronoun and the pronominal adjective are identical in form
- in the genitive-dative the pronoun and the pronominal adjective differ in form

In the accusative, when used as a direct object, the nominal group including the interrogative pronominal adjective *care* takes the preposition *pe* only when the modified noun designates a person. However, the reduplication of the direct object is necessary both when the modified noun designates a person, and an object:

- *Care carte o cumperi ?* Which book are you buying?
- *Pe care student îl recomanzi pentru postul de la bibliotecă?* Which student do you recommend for the position in the library?

When the interrogative pronoun *care* is used as a direct object, it takes the preposition *pe* regardless the semantic features of the substituted noun (person or object). The double expression of the direct object is required:

- *Pe care o cumperi?* Which one are you buying?

— ***Pe care îl recomanzi?*** Which one do you recommend?

When not being a direct object, the interrogative pronoun / pronominal adjective ***care*** take different prepositions that go with the accusative :

- ***Cu care student ai lucrat?*** Which student did you work with?
- ***Cu care dintre ei ai lucrat?*** Which one of them did you work?
- ***Despre care ai scris?*** Which one did you write about?

In the genitive, the interrogative pronoun / pronominal adjective ***care*** is preceded by the possessive or genitival article ***al, a, ai, ale***:

- ***Al căruia dintre voi este dicționarul acesta?*** Which of you does this dictionary belong to?
- ***A cărui student este cartea aceasta?*** Which student does this book belong to?

However, if the group including the pronoun or the pronominal adjective ***care*** in the genitive comes after the modified noun, it does not take the possessive article :

- ***Dicționarul căruia dintre voi e pe masă?*** The dictionary belonging to which one of you is on the table?
- ***Dicționarul cărui student este pe masă?*** Which student's dictionary is on the table?

3.4.7.5. The relative pronoun / pronominal adjective ***care***

The most challenging relative pronoun, even for native speakers of Romanian, is ***care***. The complete paradigm of ***care*** is:

	singular		plural	
	masculine	feminine	masculine	feminine
N.	<i>care</i>			
A.	<i>pe care ; cu care, fără care, lângă care, despre care, fără care, etc.</i>			
G.	<i>al, a, ai, ale căruia</i> (pron.) <i>(al, a, ai, ale) cărui(a)</i> (adj.)	<i>al, a, ai, ale căreia</i> (pron.) <i>(al, a, ai, ale) cărei(a)</i> (adj.)	<i>al, a, ai, ale căror(a)</i> (pron.) <i>(al, a, ai, ale) căror(a)</i> (adj.)	
D.	<i>căruia</i> (pron.) <i>cărui</i> (adj.)	<i>căreia</i> (pron.) <i>cărei</i> (adj.)	<i>căror(a)</i> (pron.) <i>căror</i> (adj.)	

The pronoun takes the gender, number and case of the substituted noun, and the adjective agrees in gender, number and case with the modified noun (the gender and number are relevant only in the genitive-dative).

When the relative pronoun ***care*** is a subject in the subordinate, it will be **in the nominative** case:

Băiatul care stă lângă mine este din Germania. The boy who is seated next to me is from Germany.

Fata care stă lângă mine este din Franța. The girl who are seated next to me is from France.

Băieții care stau lângă mine sunt din Rusia. The boys who are seated next to me are from Russia.

Fetele care stau lângă mine sunt din Spania. The girls who are seated next to me are from Spain.

In the accusative, as a **direct object**, the relative pronoun ***care*** always takes the preposition ***pe*** (when it substitutes both nouns designating persons and non-persons). The double expression of the direct object is required:

Colegul pe care (person) ***l-am invitat la mine este din Germania.*** The colleague whom I invited to my place is from Germany.

Cartea pe care (object) ***am primit-o ieri este de la prietena mea.*** The book that I received yesterday is from my friend.

In the dative, ***care*** takes the gender and the number of the substituted:

Băiatul cărui(a) (m. sing.) ***i-am dat cartea este simpatic.*** The boy whom I gave the books to, is nice.

Fata căreia (f. sing.) ***i-am dat cartea este simpatică.*** The girl whom I gave the books to, is nice.

Băieții căror(a) (pl.) ***le-am dat cărțile sunt simpatici.*** The boys whom I gave the books to, are nice.

Fetele căror(a) (pl.) ***le-am dat cărțile sunt simpatic.*** The girls whom I gave the books to, are nice.

In the genitive, the structures with *care* seem more difficult to construct than all the others. There are two possibilities of placing the pronoun in the subordinate : before the noun indicating the possessed object (in pre-position), or after this noun (in post-position). However, the structure with *care* in post-position occur only if the noun indicating the possessed object is **not** in the nominative case. If the noun designating the possessed object is in the accusative case, the whole construction is preceded by a preposition that goes with the accusative:

Tânărul al cărui băiețel joacă în film este fratele meu. The young man whose little boy acts in the movie is my brother.

Tânărul despre al cărui băiețel vorbim este fratele meu. ~ Tânărul despre băiețelul căruia vorbim este fratele meu. The young man about whose little boy we are talking is my brother.

The examples below give possible combinations of nouns designating the possessor (in the main clause) and the possessed object (in the subordinate, preceded or followed by the relative pronoun *care* in the genitive). They clearly show the rules of agreement that govern this structure:

<i>tânărul</i>		<i>al cărui băiețel</i> <i>a cărui fetiță</i> <i>ai cărui băieței</i> <i>ale cărui fetițe</i>	~	<i>tânărul</i>		<i>despre</i>		<i>băiețelul</i> <i>fetița</i> <i>băieții</i> <i>fetițele</i>		<i>căruia</i>
----------------	--	--	---	----------------	--	---------------	--	--	--	---------------

<i>tânăra</i>		<i>al cărei băiețel</i> <i>a cărei fetiță</i> <i>ai cărei băieței</i> <i>ale cărei fetițe</i>	~	<i>tânăra</i>		<i>despre</i>		<i>băiețelul</i> <i>fetița</i> <i>băieții</i> <i>fetițele</i>		<i>căreia</i>
---------------	--	--	---	---------------	--	---------------	--	--	--	---------------

<i>tinerii / tinerele</i>		<i>al căror băiețel</i> <i>a căror fetiță</i> <i>ai căror băieței</i> <i>ale căror fetițe</i>	~	<i>tinerii / tinerele</i>		<i>despre</i>		<i>băiețelul</i> <i>fetița</i> <i>băieții</i> <i>fetițele</i>		<i>căroră</i>
---------------------------	--	--	---	---------------------------	--	---------------	--	--	--	---------------

When *care* in the genitive comes before the noun indicating the possessed object, it takes the possessive article *al, a, ai, ale*, and the modified noun does not take an article. The relative pronoun *care* (*cărui, cărei, căror*) takes the gender and number of noun in the main clause it substitutes. The possessive article *al, a, ai, ale* agrees with the noun in the subordinate clause modified by the relative pronoun *care*.

When *care* in the genitive comes after the noun indicating the possessed object, it has the form ending in *-a* and does not take the possessive article. The modified noun takes the definite article. *Care* (*căruia, căreia, căroră*) takes the gender and the number of the noun in the main clause it substitutes.

3.4.7.6. The relative pronouns *cel ce / cel care*

The relative pronouns can often follow a demonstrative pronoun of remoteness. The combination of the short form of the demonstrative *cel, cea, cei, cele* with the relative pronouns *ce / care* is very frequent. Traditional Romanian grammars present the combination *cel ce* the one who, the one that and the members of its paradigm as a complex relative pronoun, and the structures *cel care, cea care, cei care, cele care* as combinations of demonstrative and relative pronouns. One way or another, the two structures, with *ce* or *care*, can be used in identical contexts and have identical meaning, being used as relative pronouns. Below is the complete paradigm of these pronouns :

	singular		plural	
	masculine	feminine	masculine	feminine
N.-A.	<i>cel ce, cel care</i>	<i>cea care</i>	<i>cei ce, cei care</i>	<i>cele ce, cele care</i>
G.-D.	<i>celui ce, celui care</i>	<i>celeii ce, celeii care</i>	<i>celor ce, celor care</i>	

- the combination *cea + ce* for the nominative-accusative feminine singular is not used, only *cea care* is accepted:

Cel ce / cel care a prezentat lucrarea despre verb nu este de la universitatea noastră. The one (masc.) who presented the paper on the verb is not from our university.

Cea care a prezentat lucrarea despre verb nu este de la universitatea noastră. The one (fem.) who presented the paper on the verb is not from our university.

Cei ce / cei care au prezentat lucrarea despre verb nu sunt de la universitatea noastră. The ones (masc. pl.) who presented the paper on the verb are not from our university.

Cele ce / cele care au prezentat lucrarea despre verb nu sunt de la universitatea noastră. The ones (fem. pl.) who presented the paper on the verb are not from our university.

- in the genitive-dative feminine both the form *celei ce* and *celei care* can be used:

Profesorul i-a recomandat celui ce / celui care a prezentat lucrarea despre verb să o publice. The professor recommended to the one (masc. sing.) who presented the paper on the verb to publish it.

Profesorul i-a recomandat celei ce / celei care a prezentat lucrarea despre verb să o publice. The professor recommended to the one (fem. sing.) who presented the paper on the verb to publish it.

Profesorul le-a recomandat celor ce / celor care au prezentat lucrarea despre verb să o publice. The professor recommended to the ones (masc. / fem. pl.) who presented the paper on the verb to publish it.

In the **accusative**, as a direct object, the pronoun *cel ce / cel care* always takes the preposition *pe* (both when it substitutes nouns designating persons and nouns designating non-persons):

— **Oare de ce nu au venit și profesorii de la cursul practic? I-ai invitat și pe cei ce au predat curs practic?** I wonder why the practice professors haven't come. Have you invited the professors who taught practice?

— **Uite dicționarele! Ia-le numai pe cele ce ne trebuie cu adevărat.** Here are the dictionaries! Take only those (dictionaries) we really need.

In the **genitive**, when used independently, the pronoun *cel ce / cel care* is preceded by the possessive article *al, a, ai, ale*:

Biletele celor ce pleacă mâine sunt la mine. I have the tickets of those (people) who leave tomorrow.

— **Ale cui bilete sunt aici? Ale celor ce pleacă mâine?** — Whose tickets are here? Of those who leave tomorrow?

3.4.7.7. The relative pronoun *ceea ce*

Ceea ce is a compound relative pronoun, feminine in form, whose general meaning is the equivalent of *ce* what:

Ceea ce m-a impresionat cel mai tare în lucrarea ei a fost originalitatea ideilor. What impressed me more in her paper was the originality of the ideas.

In the **accusative**, the pronoun *ceea ce* is preceded by various prepositions. As a direct object, this compound pronoun does not take the preposition *pe*:

Am văzut și eu ceea ce văzuseră toți înaintea mea. I saw what everybody before me had already seen.

El a plătit un preț scump pentru ceea ce a scris. He paid a high price for what he wrote.

Nu vreau să vorbesc despre ceea ce s-a petrecut. I don't want to talk about what happened.

Nu vreau să mă gândesc la ceea ce s-a petrecut. I don't want to think of what happened.

When it expresses the values of the **genitive** and the **dative** *ceea ce* is preceded by the preposition *a* (or *la* for the dative):

Însemnătatea a ceea ce s-a petrecut în 1989 în România este uriașă. The importance of what happened in Romania in 1989 is huge. (genitive value)

Contrar a ceea ce se spune, plantele par să aiba sentimente. Contrary to what is being said, the plants seem to have feelings. (dative value)

Nu am acordat atenție la ceea ce mi s-a recomandat să fac, iar acum regret. I didn't pay attention to what I was recommended to do, and now I regret it. (dative value)

The same pronoun *ceea ce* (the nominative form) is used to summarize the content of a previous sentence, being the equivalent of the English 'which':

Lucrarea ei este foarte interesantă, ceea ce înseamnă că va fi publicată curând. Her paper is very interesting, which means it will be soon published.

3.4.8. Indefinite pronouns

3.4.8.1. The indefinite pronouns *ceva*, *altceva* and *orice*

The indefinite pronouns *ceva* something, anything, *altceva* something else, anything else and *orice* anything, whatever replace nouns designating things, states, actions, etc. They are all derivatives of the interrogative pronoun *ce*, constructed with the indefinite elements *ori-* and *-va*, and with the element of differentiation *alt-* :

- *Ce ai în buzunar?* — *Ceva pentru tine!* — What's in your pocket? — Something for you!
- *Nu ai altceva?* — Don't you have anything else?
- *Spune-mi ceva.* — Tell me something.
- *Poți să-mi spui orice, acum nu mai contează!* Now you can tell me whatever you want to, it doesn't matter anymore!

The indefinites *ceva*, *altceva* are never used as pronominal adjectives, but only as pronouns. The indefinite *orice* can be used both as a pronoun, and as an adjective :

Orice mă interesează. I'm interested in anything.

Orice fenomen nou mă interesează. Any new phenomenon interests me.

The pronouns *ceva* and *altceva* can be modified by a descriptive adjective, in which case the adjective is in the masculine singular:

- *Am ceva frumos pentru ea.* I have something nice for her.

All these indefinites are invariable. They only have one form, the nominative-accusative one. In the accusative, when used as direct objects, they do not take a preposition. When used as circumstantials, they function with various lexical prepositions requiring the accusative :

- *Altceva contează în viață, nu banii!* There are other things than money that matter in life!
- *Vrei ceva?* Is there anything you want?
- *La început mi-ai spus altceva!* At first you told me something else!
- *Spune-mi ceva, orice vrei tu!* Tell me something, whatever you want!
- Am discutat despre ceva foarte important.* We discussed something very important.

3.4.8.2. The indefinite pronouns *cineva*, *altcineva* and *oricine*

The indefinite pronouns *cineva* somebody, anybody, someone, anyone, *altcineva* somebody else, anybody else, anyone else and *oricine* anybody, whoever replace nouns designating persons. They are all derivatives of the interrogative pronoun *cine*, constructed with the indefinite elements *ori-* and *-va*, and with the element of differentiation *alt-* :

Cineva are manual. Someone has a manual.

Altcineva are dicționar. Someone else has a dictionary.

Oricine poate cumpăra un dicționar. Anyone can buy a dictionary.

The indefinites *cineva*, *altcineva* and *oricine* can never be used as adjectives, but only as pronouns.

The pronouns *cineva* and *altcineva* can be modified by an adjective, in which case the adjective will be in the masculine singular:

- *E cineva ciudat la ușă!* There is someone strange-looking at the door!

The indefinites *cineva*, *altcineva* and *oricine* do not have plural forms. They have genitive-dative forms for the singular, based on the genitive-dative of the pronoun *cine* – *cui*:

N. – A.	<i>cineva</i>	<i>altcineva</i>	<i>oricine</i>
G. – D.	<i>(al, a, ai, ale) cuiva</i>	<i>(al, a, ai, ale) altcuiva</i>	<i>(al, a, ai, ale) oricui</i>

In the accusative, as direct objects, these pronouns will always take the preposition *pe* (since all of them substitute nouns designating human beings). The double expression of the direct object is not required:

- *Ai invitat pe cineva la cină?* Did you invite anyone to dinner?
- *Ei au chemat pe altcineva.* They called someone else.
- *Invită pe oricine!* Invite any people you want!

In the genitive, these indefinite pronouns are preceded by the possessive article *al, a, ai, ale*. However, when they come after the noun they modify, they do not take the possessive article:

- *Ale cui sunt textele acestea?* Whos texts are these texts? — *Nu știu, ale cuiva, dar ne sunt foarte bune textele oricui!* I don't know, they are somebody's, but anyone's texts are very good to us.

3.4.8.3. The negative pronouns *nimeni* and *nimic*

The negative pronoun *nimeni* nobody, anybody, no one is a substitute for nouns designating persons, and the negative pronoun *nimic* nothing, anything is a substitute for nouns designating things, actions, states, etc.. The negative pronouns *nimeni* and *nimic* can never be used as an adjectives, only as pronouns.

The negative pronoun *nimic* is invariable, having only the nominative – accusative form. The negative pronoun *nimeni* has a genitive – dative form, and has no plural:

N. – A.	<i>nimeni</i>
G. – D.	<i>(al, a, ai, ale) nimănu</i>

In the accusative, the pronoun *nimic* used as a direct object does not take a preposition. As a direct object, *nimeni* takes the preposition *pe*, but the double expression of the direct object is not required:

- *Nu cumpăr nimic.* I'm not buying anything.
- *Nu văd pe nimeni aici.* I can't see anybody here.

In the genitive, *nimeni* is preceded by the possessive article *al, a, ai, ale*. However, if it comes after the noun it modifies, it does not take the possessive article:

- *Al cui e câinele ăsta?* — *Al nimănu. E câinele nimănu.* Whose dog is this? — Nobody's. This is nobody's dog.

In sentences with the negative pronouns *nimeni* or *nimic* the verb will always be in the negative:

- Nu e nimeni aici.* There is nobody here.
- Nu mi-a adus nimic.* He brought me nothing.
- Nu mă gândesc la nimeni.* I'm not thinking of anyone.
- Nimic nu mă va putea opri.* Nothing will stop me.

3.4.8.4. The indefinite pronouns / pronominal adjectives *unul / un* and *altul / alt* in the nominative case

The indefinite pronouns / pronominal adjectives *unul / un, una / o* one of, *unii, unele* some of, *altul / alt, alta / altă* other, the other, *alții / alți, altele / alte* other, the others replace both nouns designating human beings, and nouns designating things, states, actions.

		masculine	neuter	feminine
singular	pron.	<i>unul, altul</i>		<i>una, alta</i>
	adj.	<i>un, alt</i>		<i>o, altă</i>
plural	pron.	<i>unii, alții</i>	<i>unele, altele</i>	
	adj.	<i>unii, alți</i>	<i>unele, alte</i>	

- the indefinite adjective *un, o* in the singular is identical to the indefinite article and the cardinal numeral:
Un student citește, alții scriu. One student is reading, other (students) are writing. (indefinite article or indefinite pronominal adjective)
Un student stă la cămin, doi stau la hotel și trei au închiriat un apartament. One student lives in the dorm, two live in the hotel, and three of them rented an apartment. (cardinal numeral)
- the indefinite pronoun *unul* may function independently or in the construction *unul + dintre + noun / pronoun pl.*:
Unul prezintă proiectul. One (person) is presenting the project.
Unul dintre ei prezintă proiectul. One of them is presenting the project.
- the indefinite pronoun and the indefinite adjective *unii / unele* have identical forms in the plural; all the other pronominal and adjectival forms are different:
Unii profesori sunt plicticoși. Some professors are boring. *Unii sunt plicticoși.* Some are boring.
Unele profesoare sunt plicticoase. Some teachers are boring. *Unele sunt plicticoase.* Some are boring.
- the indefinite pronominal adjectives *un, o, unii, unele, alt, altă, alți, alte* always precede the nouns they modify, and the modified nouns do not take any article:
Unii studenți vorbesc deja bine românește, alți studenți încă mai au probleme. Some students already speak Romanian well, other students still have problems.

3.4.8.5. Indefinite and negative pronouns / pronominal adjectives based on *unul / un* in the nominative

3.4.8.5.1. The indefinite pronoun / pronominal adjective *vreunul / vreun*

The indefinites *vreunul / vreun, vreuna / vreo, vreunii, vreunele* anyone, someone, any, some replace both nouns designating human beings, and nouns designating things, state, actions, etc.

		masculine	neuter	feminine
singular	pron.	<i>vreunul</i>		<i>vreuna</i>
	adj.	<i>vreun</i>		<i>vreo</i>
plural	pron.	<i>vreunii</i>	<i>vreunele</i>	
	adj.	—	—	

- in the plural the indefinite *vreunii, vreunele* does not function as an adjective

The indefinites formed with the component *vre-* has a greater degree of incertitude than *unul / un, una / o, unii, unele* being used especially in interrogative contexts:

— *Este vreun restaurant prin apropiere?* Are there any restaurants in the neighborhood?

The indefinite pronoun *vreunul* may function independently or in the construction *unul + dintre + noun / pronoun plural*:

— *Știe vreunul dintre voi franțuzește?* Does anyone of you speak French?

The indefinite pronominal adjectives *vreun*, *vreo* always precede the noun they modify, and the noun does not take any article :

— *Tu știi vreo limbă străină?* Do you know any foreign languages?

3.4.8.5.2. The negative pronoun / pronominal adjective *nici unul* / *nici un*

The negatives *nici unul* / *nici un*, *nici una* / *nici o*, *nici unii*, *nici unele* nobody, anyone, any, no, none of replace both nouns designating human beings, and nouns designating things and non-humans .

		masculine	neuter	feminine
singular	pron.	<i>nici unul</i>		<i>nici una</i>
	adj.	<i>nici un</i>		<i>nici o</i>
plural	pron.	<i>nici unii</i>	<i>nici unele</i>	
	adj.	—	—	

- in the plural the indefinites *nici unii*, *nici unele* do not function as adjectives

The negative *nici unul* may function independently or in the construction *nici unul* + *dintre* + noun/pronoun in the plural:

Azi nu a venit nici unul. None (of them) came today.

Azi nu a venit nici unul dintre studenți. None of the students came today.

The negative adjectives *nici un*, *nici o* always precede the noun they modify, and the noun does not take any article. In sentences with the negative pronouns and adjectives with *nici* the rule of the double negation applies:

Aici nu este nici un student. There are no students here.

Aici nu e nici unul. There is no one here.

3.4.8.6. The declension of the indefinite pronouns / pronominal adjectives *unul*, *vreunul* and of the negative pronoun / pronominal adjective *nici unul*

The complete paradigms of the indefinite pronouns and pronominal adjectives *unul* and *vreunul* and of the negative pronouns and pronominal adjective *nici unul* are :

		singular		plural	
		masc	fem	masc	fem
N.-A.	pron	<i>unul</i> <i>vreunul</i> <i>nici unul</i>	<i>una</i> <i>vreuna</i> <i>nici una</i>	<i>unii</i> <i>vreunii</i> <i>nici unii</i>	<i>unele</i> <i>vreunele</i> <i>nici unele</i>
	adj	<i>un</i> <i>vreun</i> <i>nici un</i>	<i>o</i> <i>vreo</i> <i>nici o</i>		
G.-D.	pron	<i>unuia</i> <i>vreunuia</i> <i>nici unuia</i>	<i>uneia</i> <i>vreuneia</i> <i>nici uneia</i>	<i>unora</i> <i>vreunora</i> <i>nici unora</i>	
	adj	<i>unui</i> <i>vreunui</i> <i>nici unui</i>	<i>unei</i> <i>vreunei</i> <i>nici unei</i>	<i>unor</i> <i>vreunor</i> <i>nici unor</i>	

- the pronouns based on *unul* / *una* and the pronominal adjectives based on *un* / *o* have identical forms in the nominative-accusative plural :

Unii profesori sunt plicticoși. (adj., nom.) Some professors are boring.

I-am văzut ieri pe unii profesori. (adj., acc.) I saw some of the professors yesterday.

Unii sunt plicticoși. (pron., nom.) Some (of them) are boring.

I-am văzut ieri pe unii. (pron., acc.) I saw some of them yesterday.

- the pronouns based on ***unul / una*** have identical forms in the genitive-dative plural, regardless the gender (***unora, vreunora, nici unora***):

— ***Le-ai spus vreunora unde suntem?*** Have you told any (of them) where we were? — ***Nu, nu le-am spus nici unora, sau poate le-am spus unora, nu mai țin minte.*** No, I haven't told any (of them), or maybe I have told some (of them), I don't remember.

- the pronominal adjectives based on ***un / o*** have identical forms in the genitive-dative plural, regardless the gender (***unor, vreunor, nici unor***):

— ***Ai spus vreunor prieteni sau cunostinte unde ne ducem?*** Have you told any friends or acquaintances where we are going?

— ***Nu, n-am spus nici unor prieteni unde ne ducem.*** No, I haven't told any friends where we were going. ***Dar poate le-a spus Andrei unor cunostinte, nu știu precis.*** But Andrei might have told some acquaintances, I don't know precisely.

- in the singular, the pronouns and the adjectives have different forms :

Un invită este din China. (adj.) One guest is from China.

Unul este din China. (pron) One (of them) is from China.

O participantă este din Japonia. (adj) One participant is from Japan.

Una e din Japonia. (pron.) One (of them) is from Japan.

N-am înțeles atitudinea nici unei delegate. (adj.) I didn't understand the attitude of any of the delegates (fem).

Nu am înțeles atitudinea nici uneia dintre ele. (pron.) I didn't understand the attitude of any of them.

— ***Ai comunicat vreunui delegat ora plecării ?*** (adj.) Did you tell any of the delegates the departure time ?

— ***Ai comunicat vreunui ora plecării ?*** (pron.) Did you tell any (of them) the departure time ?

In the **accusative**, when used as direct objects, the indefinite pronouns / pronominal adjectives ***unul*** and ***vreunul*** and the negative pronoun / pronominal adjective ***nici unul*** do not take the preposition ***pe*** if the substituted or modified noun designates non-human objects :

Am cumpărat un scaun. (adj) I bought a chair. ***Da, am cumpărat unul.*** (pron) Yes, I bought one.

— ***Ai cumpărat vreun scaun ?*** Did you buy any chair ? — ***Ai cumpărat vreunul ?*** Did you buy any (of them) ?

N-am cumpărat nici un scaun. (adj) I didn't buy any chair. ***N-am cumpărat nici unul.*** (pron) I didn't buy any.

When ***unul, vreunul*** and ***nici unul*** are used as pronominal adjectives and modify a noun designating a human being, the nominal group generally does not take the preposition ***pe***. The double expression of the direct object is not required either. The usage of the preposition ***pe*** and the double expression of the direct object are, however, possible if a certain emphasis on the direct object is necessary. When ***unul, vreunul*** and ***nici unul*** are used as pronouns and substitute a noun designating a human being, they generally take the preposition ***pe***. The double expression of the direct object is possible for emphasis, but not compulsory. The preposition ***pe*** and the double expression of the direct object indicate a lower degree of indefiniteness :

Au invitat un scriitor din România la conferință. (adj.) They invited a writer from Romania to the conference. ***(L-)au invitat pe unul din România.*** (pron.) They invited one from Romania.

— ***Au invitat vreun scriitor la conferință ?*** (adj.) Did they invite any writer to the conference ? — ***(L-)au invitat (pe) vreunul ?*** (pron.) Did they invite any (of them) ?

Nu au invitat nici un scriitor la conferință. (adj.). They didn't invite any writer to the conference. ***Nu (l-)au invitat (pe) nici unul.*** (pron.) They didn't invite any (of them).

In the **genitive**, when the pronouns ***unul, vreunul*** and ***nici unul*** or the nominal structure with the pronominal adjectives ***unul, vreunul*** and ***nici unul*** are used independently or in a position remote to the modified noun, the genival or possessive article ***al, a, ai, ale*** is required :

— ***Cred că nu e visul nici unei femei să nu fie iubită.*** I don't think the dream of any woman is not to be loved. — ***Da, al nici uneia, sunt sigură.*** (pron., independent) Yeah, of any (of them), I'm sure.

In the **dative**, when *unul*, *vreunul* and *nici unul* as indirect objects replace or modify a noun designating a human being, the double expression of the indirect object is possible, but not compulsory :

— *Poți oferi cadouri unui invitat*. You can offer gifts to a guest. — *Poți oferi un cadou unuia dintre ei*. You can offer a gift to one of them.

Nu am oferit cadouri nici unui invitat. I didn't offer gifts to any guest. *N-am oferit cadouri nici unuia*. I didn't offer gifts to any (of them).

3.4.8.7. The indefinite pronoun / pronominal adjective *altul* / *alt*

The complete paradigm of the indefinite pronoun and pronominal adjective *altul* is :

		singular		plural	
		masc	fem	masc	fem
N.-A.	pron	<i>altul</i>	<i>alta</i>	<i>alții</i>	<i>altele</i>
	adj	<i>alt</i>	<i>altă</i>	<i>alți</i>	<i>alte</i>
G.-D.	pron	<i>altuia</i>	<i>alteia</i>	<i>altora</i>	
	adj	<i>altui</i>	<i>altei</i>	<i>altor</i>	

- the pronouns and the adjectives have different forms in all the numbers, genders and cases
- in the genitive-dative plural there is one pronominal form (*altora*) and one adjectival form (*altor*), regardless the gender of the substituted or modified nouns :

Spune-le și altora ce s-a întâmplat aici. (pron.) Tell others what happened here.

Spune-le și altor oameni ce s-a întâmplat aici. (adj.) Tell other people what happened here. *Spune-le și altor femei*. (adj.) Tell other women, too.

In the **accusative**, when used as direct objects, the indefinite pronoun / pronominal adjective *altul* does not take the preposition *pe* if the substituted or modified noun designates non-human objects :

Am cumpărat alt scaun. (adj.) I bought a different chair. *Da, am cumpărat altul*. (pron.) Yes, I bought a different one.

When *altul* is used as a pronominal adjective and modifies a noun designating a human being, the nominal group generally does not take the preposition *pe*. The double expression of the direct object is not required either. The usage of the preposition *pe* and the double expression of the direct object are, however, possible if a certain emphasis on the direct object is necessary. When *altul* is used as a pronoun and substitutes a noun designating a human being, it generally takes the preposition *pe*. The double expression of the direct object is possible for emphasis, but not compulsory. The preposition *pe* and the double expression of the direct object indicate a lower degree of indefiniteness :

Au invitat alt scriitor din România la conferință. (adj.) They invited a different writer from Romania to the conference.

(L-)au invitat (pe) altul din România. (pron.) They invited a different one from Romania.

In the **genitive**, when the pronoun *altul* or the nominal structure with the pronominal adjective *altul* are used independently or in a position remote to the modified noun, the genitival or possessive article *al*, *a*, *ai*, *ale* is required:

— *Cred că aceasta nu este scrisoarea lui Alexandru, ci scrisoarea altui coleg*. I think this is not Alexandru's letter, but another colleague's letter. — *Da, scrisoarea aceasta este a altui coleg*. (adj., remote) — Yes, this letters belongs to another colleague. — *E a altuia, sunt sigură*. (pron., independent) It belongs to somebody else, I'm sure.

In the **dative**, when *altul* as an indirect objects replaces or modifies a noun designating a human being, the double expression of the indirect object is possible, but not compulsory:

(I-)am oferit cadouri altui invitat. I offered gifts to another guest. *(I-)am oferit cadouri altuia*. I offered gifts to a different one.

3.4.8.8. The indefinite pronouns / pronominal adjectives *oricare* and *fiecare*

The complete paradigms of the indefinite pronouns / pronominal adjectives *oricare* anyone, anything, any and *fiecare* any of them, any are :

		singular		plural	
		masc	fem	masc	fem
nom-acc	pron / adj	<i>oricare</i> <i>fiecare</i> (not used in the plural)			
gen-dat	pron	<i>oricăruia</i> <i>fiecăruia</i>	<i>oricăreia</i> <i>fiecăreia</i>	<i>oricăroră</i> —	
	adj	<i>oricărui</i> <i>fiecărui</i>	<i>oricărei</i> <i>fiecărei</i>	<i>oricăror</i> —	

- in the nominative-accusative singular and plural the pronouns / adjectives *oricare* and *fiecare* have only one form for both masculine and feminine :
Poate să vină oricare dintre ei / oricare dintre ele cu mine. Any of them can come with me.
Am vorbit cu fiecare student / cu fiecare studentă în parte. I spoke with each student separately.
- in the genitive-dative singular there are separate forms for the two genders :
— *Dă-i cartea oricăruia dintre studenți / oricăreia dintre studente.* Give the book to any of the students.
I-am dat fiecărui student / fiecărei studente câte o carte. I gave each student a book.
I-am dat fiecăruia / fiecăreia câte o carte. I gave one book to each (of them).
- the pronoun / adjective *fiecare* does not have a plural form

In the **accusative**, when used as direct objects, the indefinite pronouns *oricare* and *fiecare* require the preposition *pe* and the double expression of the direct object, regardless the human / non-human feature of the substituted noun. When used as pronominal adjectives, *oricare* and *fiecare* do not interfere with the general rule for nouns : if the modified noun designates a non-human object, the preposition *pe* and the double expression are not necessary, while when the modified noun designates a human being, the preposition *pe* is required. Given the indefiniteness of the pronouns *oricare* and *fiecare*, the double expression of the direct object can be used, but it is not compulsory (with the pronoun *fiecare*, the second direct object will be in the plural) :

Poți citi oricare roman de Rebreanu. (adj) You can read any novel by Rebreanu. *Vorbesc serios, îl poți citi pe oricare.* (pron) I mean it, you can read any (of them).

Încearcă să citești fiecare roman de pe lista de lecturi. (adj) Try to read each novel on the list of readings. *Citește-l pe fiecare în parte.* (pron) Read each (of them).

(Îl) poți invita pe oricare student din grupă să prezinte o lucrare la conferință. (adj) You can invite any student in this class to present a paper in the conference. *Vorbesc serios, (îl) poți invita pe oricare.* (pron) I mean it, you can invite any (of them).

Încearcă să(-l) inviți pe fiecare student în parte la o discuție amicală. (adj) Try to invite each student in the class for a friendly discussion. *Invită(-l) pe fiecare dintre ei.* (pron) Invite each of them.

In the **genitive**, when the pronouns *oricare* and *fiecare* or the nominal structure with the pronominal adjectives *oricare* and *fiecare* are used independently or in a position remote to the modified noun, the genitival or possessive article *al, a, ai, ale* is required :

— *Visul oricărei femei este să fie iubită.* The dream of any woman is to be loved. *Acesta este visul cel mai puternic al oricărei femei.* (adj, remote) This is the strongest dream of any woman. — *Crezi că acesta este visul oricăreia ?* Do you think that this is the dream of any (of them) ? — *Da, al oricăreia, sunt sigură.* (pron, independent) Yes, (the dream) of any (of them), I'm sure.

In the **dative**, when *oricare* and *fiecare* as indirect objects are replacing or modifying a noun that designates a human being, the double expression of the indirect object is possible, but not compulsory :

Poți oferi cadouri oricărui invitat. You can offer gifts to any guest. **Poți oferi un cadou oricăruia dintre ei.** You can offer a gift to any of them.

(I)-am oferit fiecărui invitat câte un cadou. I offered a gift to each guest. **(I)-am oferit fiecăruia câte un cadou.** I offered a gift to each (of them).

3.4.9. Reduplication of pronominal complements

3.4.9.1. The double expression of the direct and indirect object

Both the direct object and the indirect object can be and often are expressed twice in Romanian, i.e. the object expressed by nouns or substitutes can be reduplicated by the unstressed form of the personal pronoun in the accusative or dative. The double expression depends on the same conditions and restrictions as the usage of the preposition *pe* for the direct object (animate +/-, person +/-, definite +/-, the expression of the direct object by different types of pronouns, the usage of different articles, the presence of certain modifiers). It also depends on the word order in the sentence. Since in Romanian the word order is relatively free, the direct or indirect object can come after the verb (the regular word order) or they can precede the verb (inverted order, having emphatic or stylistic functions). Therefore, there is a distinction made between **the anticipation** and **the reiteration** of the direct-indirect object.

3.4.9.1.1. The anticipation of the direct object

The anticipation occurs when the word order in the sentence is the regular one (V–O). The direct object is anticipated for the majority of the direct objects that take the preposition *pe*. For nouns designating defined / identified persons the anticipation is considered optional. However, in contemporary standard Romanian there is a strong tendency towards the anticipation, and sentences without the anticipation of this direct object are perceived as archaic or incorrect:

I-am văzut pe prietenii tăi aseară la teatru. I saw your friends at the concert last night.

Am așteptat-o pe Maria o oră, dar n-a venit. I waited for Maria for one hour, but she didn't come.

Le-am invitat pe toate. (fetele) I invited them all. (the girls)

Le-am pus pe masă pe toate. (cărțile) I put them all on the table. (the books)

The anticipation is required when the direct object is:

- a stressed form of the personal or reflexive pronoun

El ne-a așteptat pe noi. He waited for us.

Ea se iubește doar pe sine. She only loves herself.

- a possessive pronoun (substitute for both animate or inanimate objects)

I-a invitat și pe a mei. (prietenii) He / she invited mine, too. (my friends)

Le-ai luat și pe ale mele? (cărțile) Did you take mine, too? (my books)

- a demonstrative pronoun (substitute for both animate or inanimate objects)

Îl prefer pe acela. (pe tânărul acela) I prefer that one over there. (that young man)

Îl prefer pe acesta. (dicționarul acesta) I prefer this one. (this dictionary)

The anticipation does not occur when the direct object does not take the preposition *pe*. Also, it is not required when the direct object is:

- one of the indefinite or negative pronouns replacing nouns that designate human beings *pe cineva*, *pe altcineva*, *pe oricine*, *pe nimeni*:

— **Ce e, ai văzut pe cineva?** What is it? Did you see somebody?

— **Invită pe altcineva, dacă nu vrei să o inviți pe Maria.** Invite someone else, if you don't want to invite Maria.

— **Accept pe oricine, numai să fie un om cumsecade.** I can accept anyone, if he is a decent person.

— **Nu vreau să văd pe nimeni.** I don't want to see anybody.

3.4.9.1.2. The reiteration of the direct object

The reiteration of the direct object occurs when the word order in the sentence is inverted (O–V).

The reiteration is required when the direct object preceding the verb is:

- any noun (designating any kind of objects, animate, inanimate, persons, non-persons) that has the definite article, regardless of the presence of the preposition *pe*:
 - Rudele mi le cunoaște.*** He / she knows my relatives.
 - Și pe prietenii mei îi cunoaște destul de bine.*** He / she also knows my friends quite well.
 - Filmul l-am văzut, dar romanul nu l-am citit.*** I saw the movie, but I haven't read the novel.
- a direct object with the preposition *pe* (except *pe cine, pe cineva, pe altcineva, pe oricine, pe nimeni*):
 - Pe Maria am văzut-o ieri la universitate.*** I saw Maria yesterday at the university.
 - Pe ceilalți nu i-am văzut. (pe ceilalți colegi)*** I haven't seen the others. (the other colleagues)
 - Pe celelalte le-am pus pe masă. (cărțile celelalte)*** I put the other ones on the table. (the other books)
- any noun (designating any kind of objects, animate, inanimate, persons, non-persons) modified by a demonstrative pronominal adjective (except *atare, așa, astfel de*):
 - Pe acest om îl cunosc de când aveam șase ani.*** I have known this man since I was six years old.
 - Pe omul acesta îl cunosc de când aveam șase ani.*** I have known this man since I was six years old.
 - Acest roman l-am citit recent.*** I read this novel recently.
 - Romanul acesta l-am citit recent.*** I read this novel recently.
- any noun (designating any kind of objects, animate, inanimate, persons, non-persons) modified by a possessive pronominal adjective:
 - Pe fratele tău l-am cunoscut cândva.*** I've met your brother a long time ago.
 - Romanul tău l-am citit și mi-a plăcut foarte mult.*** I read your novel, and I liked it a lot.
- any noun (designating any kind of objects, animate, inanimate, persons, non-persons) modified by an adjective in the superlative degree of comparison:
 - Pe cei mai înalți copii i-am invitat să se așeze în ultima bancă.*** I asked the tallest kids to sit in the back of the class.
 - Cel mai frumos cadou îl vreau pentru ea!*** I want the most beautiful gift for her.

The reiteration is not allowed for the majority of the direct objects built without the preposition *pe*, as well as for such direct objects with *pe*, replacing nouns that designate human beings, as *pe cineva, pe oricine, pe altcineva, pe nimeni*:

Multă lume a venit aseară! So many people came last night!

Filme interesante am văzut recent, dar nu prea mi-au plăcut. I saw some interesting movies recently, but I didn't really like them.

Frumoase poze ai făcut! Oh, you made such beautiful pictures.

Pe cineva aș invita totuși diseară, dar nu știu precis pe cine. I would invite someone to come tonight, after all, but I don't know whom.

Pe altcineva nu vreau să invit. I don't want to invite someone else.

Pe nimeni n-am sunat de când m-am întors în București. I haven't called anyone since I came back to Bucharest.

3.4.9.1.3. The anticipation of the indirect object

The anticipation of the indirect object (a noun or a substitute in the dative, certain pronouns and numerals in the accusative with the preposition *la*) is required only when the indirect object is a personal pronoun in the dative:

Ea mi-a încredințat acest secret numai mie. She only told me this secret.

V-am spus numai vouă ce s-a întâmplat. I only told you about what happened.

It is also required in the impersonal construction with the dative indicating the state of being (*mi-e foame, mi-e sete, mi-e frig, mi-e cald, mi-e bine, mi-e rău, mi-e dor*):

Îi e foame bietului copil, da-ți-i ceva de mâncare! Maybe he's hungry, the poor kid, give him something to eat!

Îi e cald femeii, spune-i să-și scoată paltonul! She's hot, the poor woman, tell her to take her coat off.

The anticipation is never required when the indirect object refers to an inanimate object:

Dă prioritate camionului! Let the truck pass!

N-am dat atenție celor spuse de tine, și uite ce-am pățit! I did not pay attention to what you told me, and look what happened to me.

With all the other types of indirect object the anticipation is optional. However, the tendency to anticipate indirect objects designating persons is strong in contemporary Romanian: ***Le-am scris părinților o scrisoare.*** I wrote my parents a letter. and ***Am scris părinților o scrisoare.*** I wrote my parents a letter. are both correct, but the one with double expression is preferred.

3.4.9.1.4. The reiteration of the indirect object

The reiteration is required in most of the situations, with indirect objects designating any kind of objects, animate or inanimate:

Prietenei mele îi scriu mesaje în fiecare zi, fratelui meu nu-i scriu așa de des. I write my friend daily messages, but I don't write so often to my brother.

În societatea noastră învățământului nu i se mai dă atenția cuvenită. In our society education does not get the due attention.

Lor nu le lipsește nimic. They have all they need.

Celorlaltă le-am spus eu să vină mai târziu. I told the others to come later.

Amândurora li s-a spus să stea acasă. They were both told to stay home.

The reiteration is optional only for the indirect objects expressed with the dative (or the accusative with the preposition *la*) of the pronouns *cine*, *oricine*, *cât*, *oricât*, but even in these situations, it is preferred.

The reiteration is not accepted in exceptional situations, when it would imply impossible combinations of unstressed forms of personal pronouns in the dative and in the accusative, such as: **i mă*, **i vă*, **vă mă*.

3.5. Quantitative expressions and numerals

3.5.1. Quantitative pronouns and adjectives

3.5.1.1. The interrogative / relative pronoun / pronominal adjective *cât* in the nominative case

The interrogative / relative pronoun / pronominal adjective *cât*, *câtă*, *câți*, *câte* how much / how many can substitute or modify both noun designating human beings, and nouns designating objects.

	masculine	neuter	feminine
singular	<i>cât</i>		<i>câtă</i>
plural	<i>câți</i>	<i>câte</i>	

- the pronominal and adjectival forms of *cât*, *câtă*, *câți*, *câte* are identical

The singular forms *cât*, *câtă* correspond to the English 'how much' and they substitute nouns designating non-countable objects or, as adjectives, match such nouns:

- *Avem vin!* We have wine!
- *Cât?* How much? (pron.)
- *Avem pâine!* We have bread!
- *Câtă?* How much? (pron.)
- *Cât vin avem?* How much wine do we have? (adj.)
- *Câtă pâine avem?* How much bread do we have? (adj.)

The plural forms *câți*, *câte* correspond to the English 'how many' and they substitute nouns designating countable objects or, as adjectives, match such nouns:

- *Sunt niște studenți în clasă.* There are some students (m.) in the classroom.
- *Câți?* How many? (pron.)
- *Sunt niște studente în clasă.* There are some students (f.) in the classroom.
- *Câte?* How many? (pron.)
- *Sunt scaune în clasă.* There are chairs in the classroom.
- *Câte?* How many? (pron.)
- *Câți studenți sunt aici?* How many students (m.) are here? (adj.)
- *Câte studente sunt aici?* How many students (f.) are here? (adj.)
- *Câte scaune sunt aici?* How many chairs (n.) are here? (adj.)

The noun coming after *cât*, *câtă*, *câți*, *câte* does not take any article.

3.5.1.2. The indefinite pronoun / pronominal adjective *atât* in the nominative case

The indefinite pronoun / pronominal adjective *atât(a)*, *atâta*, *atâți(a)*, *atâtea* (that much / that many) substitute / modify both noun designating human beings, and nouns designating objects. In the masculine, the pronoun *atât* has an alternative form *atâta*. The pronouns and the pronominal adjectives are identical in form.

	masculine	neuter	feminine
singular	<i>atât(a)</i>		<i>atâta</i>
plural	<i>atâți(a)</i>	<i>atâtea</i>	

The singular forms *atât(a)*, *atâta* substitute / modify nouns designating non-countable objects: *cât vin?* how much wine? – *atât(a)* that much – *atât(a) vin* that much wine; *câtă apă?* how much water? – *atâta* that much – *atâta apă* that much water.

The plural forms *atâți(a)*, *atâtea* substitute / modify plural forms of nouns designating countable objects: *câți băieți?* how many boys? – *atâți(a)* – that many – *atâția băieți* that many boys; *câte fete?* how many girls? – *atâtea* that many – *atâtea fete* that many girls.

The pronominal adjectives *atât(a)*, *atâta*, *atâția*, *atâtea* precede the noun they modify. The modified noun does not take an article.

The indefinite pronouns *atât(a)* – *atâta* – *atâți(a)* – *atâtea* can indicate a very small or a very large indefinite quantity. In speech they are often accompanied by appropriate gestures showing the quantity. Combined with restrictive adverbs, they also get some extra information about the quantity: *doar / numai* just, only *atât* (small quantity). When pronounced with a prominent ascending intonation the indefinite pronouns *atât(a)* – *atâta* – *atâți(a)* – *atâtea* indicate a very large indefinite quantity or a very intense phenomenon: *atâta lume!* so many people!, *atâta iubire!* so much love! In this structure, the pronominal adjective *atât* can be replaced by *cât*, and the meaning will be the same: *câtă lume!* so many people!, *câtă iubire!* so much love!

3.5.1.3. The indefinite pronouns / pronominal adjectives *oricât* and *câtva* in the nominative case

The indefinite pronouns / pronominal adjectives *oricât* any quantity, any amount of and *câtva* a certain quantity, a certain amount of, some can substitute / modify both noun designating human beings, and nouns designating objects. The indefinite pronouns / adjectives *oricât*, *oricâtă*, *oricâți*, *oricâte* and *câtva*, *câtăva*, *cățiva*, *câteva* (some) is composed of the pronoun *cât*, *câtă*, *căți*, *câte* plus the invariable indefinite components *ori-* and *-va*. The pronouns and the pronominal adjectives are identical in form.

	masculine	neuter	feminine
singular	<i>oricât</i> <i>câtva</i>		<i>oricâtă</i> <i>câtăva</i>
plural	<i>oricâți</i> <i>cățiva</i>	<i>oricâte</i> <i>câteva</i>	

The singular forms *oricât*, *oricâtă* and *câtva*, *câtăva* indicate an undetermined quantity of non-countable objects; as pronominal adjectives they match nouns designating non-countable objects. The singular forms *câtva* and *câtăva* are seldom used, and work only as pronominal adjectives :

- *Mai avem timp?* — Do we still have time?— *Da, mai avem câtva timp.* Yes, we still have some time.
- *Cât vin vrei să bei?* How much wine would you like to drink? — *Oricât ! Pot să beau oricât vin!* As much / as little as possible. I can drink any amount of wine.

The singular forms can be replaced by another indefinite pronoun – *ceva* something, that in the context gets the meaning of small indefinite quantity:

- *Mai avem pâine?* — Do we still have bread?— *Da, mai e ceva. Mai e ceva pâine acolo.* — Yes, there is some. There is some bread over there.

The plural forms *cățiva*, *câteva* some, several replace names of countable objects, and as pronominal adjectives match with names designating countable objects:

- *Avem cartofi?* — Do we have potatoes? — *Da, cățiva. Avem cățiva cartofi.* — Yes, some. We have several potatoes.
- *Câte pâini să cumpăr?* How many loaves of bread should I buy? — *Oricâte. Cumpără oricâte pâini vrei.* As many as you want. Buy as many loaves of bread as you want.

The pronominal adjectives *oricât*, *oricâtă*, *oricâți*, *oricâte* and *câtva*, *câtăva*, *cățiva*, *câteva* always precede the noun they modify. The modified noun does not take an article.

3.5.1.4. The indefinite pronoun / pronominal adjective *tot* in the nominative case

The indefinite pronoun / pronominal adjective *tot, toată, toți, toate* all, everything, the whole... can substitute or modify both noun designating human beings, and nouns designating objects. The pronouns and the pronominal adjective are identical in form.

	masculine	neuter	feminine
singular	<i>tot</i>		<i>toată</i>
plural	<i>toți</i>	<i>toate</i>	

The singular forms of the pronoun / pronominal adjective *tot, toată* replace / modify nouns designating uncountable objects: mass nouns, nouns designating states of being, etc.:

- *Unde este vinul?* Where is the wine? — *Tot vinul este aici.* All the wine is here. — *Tot?* All of it? — *Tot!* All of it!
- *Unde este pâinea?* Where is the bread? — *Toată pâinea este aici.* All the bread is here. — *Toată?* All of it? — *Toată!* All of it!

The plural forms of the pronoun / pronominal adjective *toți, toate* replace / match nouns in the plural, designating countable objects:

- *Unde sunt studenții?* Where are the students (masc)? — *Sunt toți aici.* All of them are here. — *Toți studenții sunt aici.* All the students are here.
- *Unde sunt studentele?* Where are the students (fem)? — *Sunt toate aici.* All of them are here. — *Toate studentele sunt aici.* All of the students are here.
- *Unde sunt scaunele?* Where are the chairs? — *Sunt toate aici.* They are all here. — *Toate scaunele sunt aici.* All the chairs are here.

The pronominal adjectives *tot, toată, toți, toate* are generally placed before the noun. However, there are situations when for emphasis it can be placed after the noun. The noun modified by the adjective *tot, toată, toți, toate* always takes the definite article:

Toată țara știe cine este el. Țara toată știe cine este el. The whole country knows who he is.

There is a form of this indefinite pronoun in the masculine singular, *totul*, that have a general cumulative meaning :

Totul este minunat. Everything / all is wonderful.

3.5.1.5. The declension of the quantitative pronouns / pronominal adjectives *cât, atât, oricât, câtva* and *tot*

Below is the complete paradigm of the interrogatives *cât, câtă, câți, câte*

	singular		plural	
	masculine	feminine	Masculine	Feminine
N.-A.	<i>cât</i>	<i>câtă</i>	<i>câți</i>	<i>câte</i>
G.-D.	—		<i>(al, a, ai, ale) câtoră</i> (pronoun) <i>(al, a, ai, ale) câtor</i> (adjective)	

Below is the complete paradigm of the indefinites *atât(a), atâtă, atâți(a), atâtea*

	singular		plural	
	masculine	feminine	masculine	feminine
N.-A.	<i>atât(a)</i>	<i>atâtă</i>	<i>atâți(a)</i>	<i>atâtea</i>
G.-D.	—		<i>(al, a, ai, ale) atătora</i> (pronoun) <i>(al, a, ai, ale) atător</i> (adjective)	

Below is the complete paradigm of the indefinites *oricât, oricâtă, oricâți, orcâte* and *câtva, câtăva, câțiva, câteva*

	singular		plural	
	masculine	feminine	masculine	feminine
N.-A.	<i>oricât</i> <i>câtva</i>	<i>oricâtă</i> <i>câtăva</i>	<i>oricâți</i> <i>cățiva</i>	<i>oricâte</i> <i>câteva</i>
G.-D.	—		<i>(al, a, ai, ale) oricătora</i> (pronoun) <i>(al, a, ai, ale) oricător</i> (adjective) <i>(al, a, ai, ale) cătorva</i>	

Below is the complete paradigm of the indefinites *tot, toată, toți, toate*

	singular		plural	
	masculine	feminine	masculine	feminine
N.-A.	<i>tot</i>	<i>toată</i>	<i>toți</i>	<i>toate</i>
G.-D.	—		<i>(al, a, ai, ale) tuturor</i>	

- all of the pronouns listed above have only the plural form of genitive-dative; they do not have genitive-dative forms in the singular:
 - *Lucrările câtor studenți sunt deja corectate?* The papers of how many students have been corrected? — *Ale cătoră? Nu știu. Ale cătorva, poate ale tuturor.* Of how many? I don't know. (The papers) of some, or maybe of all of them.
- the pronominal and adjectival forms are identical in the nominative-accusative, but in the genitive-dative some of them (*cât, oricât, atât*) have different forms:
 - *Nu mai știu cătora le-am spus să vină mâine mai devreme.* I don't remember how many (people) I've told to come earlier tomorrow. (pronoun)
 - *Nu mai știu câtor studenți le-am spus să vină mâine mai devreme.* I don't remember how many students I've told to come earlier tomorrow. (adjective)
 - *Oricătora le-aș fi spus să vină mai devreme tot rău e, pentru că nu le-am spus tuturor.* It's bad anyway, regardless of how many I've told, because I haven't told all of them. (pronoun)
 - *Oricâtor studenți le-aș fi spus să vină mai devreme tot rău e, pentru că nu le-am spus tuturor.* It's bad anyway, regardless of how many students I've told, because I haven't told all of them. (adjective)

As pronominal adjectives, they often form the genitive and the dative singular with the prepositions *a* (for the genitive) and *la* (for the dative) + the nominative-accusative forms of the pronominal adjective and of the modified noun. However, these forms are perceived in standard Romanian as not completely correct:

— *La câtă lume ai spus deja despre ce s-a petrecut? Ai spus deja povestea la toată universitatea?* How many people have you already told to about what happened? Have you already told the story to the whole university?

The genitive plural is often formed with the preposition *a* and the nominative-accusative form of the pronoun / adjective, and the dative is often formed with the preposition *la* and the nominative-accusative form of the pronoun / adjective:

- *Lucrările câtor studenți sunt deja corectate?* ~ — *Lucrările a câți studenți sunt deja corectate?* The papers of how many students have already been corrected?
- *Câtor studenți le-ai explicat deja regula?* ~ — *La câți studenți le-ai explicat deja regula?* To how many students have you already explained the rule?
- *Câtorva.* ~ — *La câțiva.* To some (students).
- *Le-am explicat-o tuturor.* ~ — *Le-am explicat-o la toți.* I have explained it to all of them / to everybody.

3.5.1.6. Adjectives of indefinite quantity

The adjectives of indefinite quantity are : *mult* much, *puțin* little, *destul* enough, *suficient* sufficient, enough.

singular		plural	
masculine and neuter	feminine	masculine	feminine and neuter
<i>mult</i>	<i>multă</i>	<i>mulți</i>	<i>multe</i>
<i>puțin</i>	<i>puțină</i>	<i>puțini</i>	<i>puține</i>
<i>destul</i>	<i>destulă</i>	<i>destui</i>	<i>destule</i>
<i>suficient</i>	<i>suficientă</i>	<i>suficienți</i>	<i>suficiente</i>

In order to express a large indefinite quantity the four-form adjective *mult*, *multă*, *mulți*, *multe* is used.

In order to express a small indefinite quantity the four-form adjective *puțin*, *puțină*, *puțini*, *puține* is used.

In order to express the sufficient indefinite quantity the four forms adjectives *destul*, *destulă*, *destui*, *destule* or *suficient*, *suficientă*, *suficienți*, *suficiente* are used.

The singular forms of these adjectives modify nouns indicating non-countable objects, while the forms of the plural match with nouns indicating a certain amount of countable objects. The adjectives of indefinite quantity usually come after the noun they modify, but the reverted word order is also possible. The nouns modified by such adjectives do not take an article, regardless their position :

Avem mult / puțin / destul / suficient timp. We have a lot of / little / enough / sufficient time.

Avem timp mult / puțin / destul / suficient. We have a lot of / little / enough / sufficient time.

Avem multă / puțină / destulă / suficientă pâine. We have a lot of / little / enough / sufficient bread.

Avem pâine multă / puțină / destulă / suficientă. We have a lot of / little / enough / sufficient bread.

Aici sunt mulți / puțini / destui / suficienți pepeni. There are a lot of / little / enough / sufficient water mellons.

Aici sunt pepeni mulți / puțini / destui / suficienți. There are a lot of / little / enough / sufficient water mellons.

Aici sunt multe / puține / destule / suficiente mere. There are a lot of / little / enough / sufficient apples.

Aici sunt mere multe / puține / destule / suficiente. There are a lot of / little / enough / sufficient apples.

3.5.2. Cardinal numerals

3.5.2.1. The cardinal numerals from 0 to 10

0 – zero	
1 – <i>unu, un, una, o</i>	6 – <i>șase</i>
2 – <i>doi, două</i>	7 – <i>șapte</i>
3 – <i>trei</i>	8 – <i>opt</i>
4 – <i>patru</i>	9 – <i>nouă</i>
5 – <i>cinci</i>	10 – <i>zece</i>

The cardinal numeral corresponding to the English 'one' has four forms. The forms *unu* (masculine and neuter) and *una* (feminine) are used independently. The forms *un* (masculine and neuter) and *o* (feminine) precede a noun:

- *Câți studenți sunt aici?* — How many students (m.) are there in here? — *Unu. Un student.* — One. One student.
- *Câte scaune sunt aici?* — How many chairs are here? — *Unu. Un scaun.* — One. One chair.
- *Câte studente sunt aici?* — How many students (f.) are here? — *Una. O studentă.* — One. One student.

The cardinal numeral corresponding to the English 'two' has two forms. *Doi* is used for the masculine, and *două* for the feminine and neuter:

- *Câți studenți sunt aici?* — How many students (m.) are there in here? — *Doi. Doi studenți.* — Two. Two students.
- *Câte scaune sunt aici?* — How many chairs are here? — *Două. Două scaune.* — Two. Two chairs.
- *Câte studente sunt aici?* — How many students (f.) are here? — *Două. Două studente.* — Two. Two students.

The numeral *zero* and all the other numerals up to *zece* are invariable:

- *Câți studenți sunt aici?* — How many students (m.) are there in here? — *Trei. Trei studente.* — Three. Three students.
- *Câte scaune sunt aici?* — How many chairs are here? — *Trei. Trei scaune.* — Three. Three chairs.
- *Câte studente sunt aici?* — How many students (f.) are here? — *Trei. Trei studente.* — Three. Three students.

3.5.2.2. The cardinal numerals from 11 to 19

11 – <i>unsprezece</i> [<i>unșpe</i>]
12 – <i>doisprezece</i> [<i>doișpe</i>], <i>douăsprezece</i> [<i>douășpe</i>]
13 – <i>treisprezece</i> [<i>treișpe</i>]
14 – <i>paisprezece</i> [<i>paișpe</i>]
15 – <i>cincisprezece</i> [<i>cinșpe</i>]
16 – <i>șaisprezece</i> [<i>șaișpe</i>]
17 – <i>șaptesprezece</i> [<i>șaptișpe</i>]
18 – <i>optsprezece</i> [<i>optișpe</i>]
19 – <i>nouăsprezece</i> [<i>nouășpe</i>]

The element *-sprezece* (*spre* 'towards', 'on'; *zece* 'ten') is added to the cardinal numeral expressing units. In non-formal speech the element *-sprezece* is pronounced (but not written) [*șpe*]: *unsprezece* [*unșpe*], *doisprezece* [*doișpe*], *treisprezece* [*treișpe*], etc.

The numeral 12 has two forms – *doisprezece* for the masculine and *douăsprezece* for the feminine and neuter:

- Aici sunt doisprezece studenți.* There are 12 students (m.) here.
- Acolo sunt douăsprezece studente.* There are 12 students (f.) here.
- Aici sunt douăsprezece scaune.* There are 12 chairs here.

All the other numerals in this group are invariable.

3.5.2.3. The cardinal numerals from 20 to 99

20 – *douăzeci*
 30 – *treizeci*
 40 – *patruzeci*
 50 – *cincizeci*
 60 – *șaizeci*
 70 – *șaptezeci*
 80 – *optzeci*
 90 – *nouăzeci*

The cardinal numerals indicating the tens are formed by the numeral indicating units and the plural of the numeral *zece* (taken as a feminine noun): *două* (2) + *zeci* (10) = *douăzeci* (20), *trei* (3) + *zeci* (10) = *treizeci* (30), *nouă* (9) + *zeci* (10) = *nouăzeci* (90), etc. These numerals are written as one word. The numerals **50** and **80** are pronounced [*cinzeci*] and [*obzeci*].

The noun coming after such a numeral is preceded by the preposition *de*: *douăzeci de studenți* twenty students (masc.), *treizeci de studente* thirty students, etc.

3.5.2.4. The cardinal numerals 21, 22, ...; 31, 32, ...; 41, 42, ...; etc.

21, 22, 23, 24, etc. – *douăzeci și unu / douăzeci și una, douăzeci și doi / douăzeci și două, douăzeci și trei, douăzeci și patru*, etc.
 31, 32, 33, 34, etc. – *treizeci și unu / treizeci și una, treizeci și doi / treizeci și două, treizeci și trei, treizeci și patru*, etc.
 41, 42, 43, 44, etc. – *patruzeci și unu / patruzeci și una, patruzeci și doi / patruzeci și două, patruzeci și trei, patruzeci și patru*, etc.

Beginning with **21** the units are added to the tens. The connection between the tens and the units is made by the conjunction *și*.

Like the cardinal numerals indicating the tens, the compound cardinal numerals below 100 will be connected to the following noun by the preposition *de*: *douăzeci și unu de studenți* twenty one students (masc.), *treizeci și trei de studente* thirty three students, etc.

3.5.2.5. The cardinal numerals 100 and 1.000

NOTE: The groups of figures representing thousands are not separated by commas, but they can be separated by dots: e.g. 'one thousand' is written 1.000.

	100		1.000	
	singular	plural	singular	plural
N. – Ac.	<i>o sută; suta</i>	<i>niște sute; sutele</i>	<i>o mie; mia</i>	<i>niște mii; miile</i>
G. – D.	<i>unei sute; sutei</i>	<i>unor sute; sutelor</i>	<i>unei mii; miei</i>	<i>unor mii; miilor</i>

The cardinal numerals *sută* and *mie* are formally identical to feminine nouns in *-ă* and in *-e*, i.e. their forms change according to number and case, they can take the definite or indefinite article, and can be modified by adjective or pronominal adjectives.

The noun after these numerals is preceded by the preposition *de*: *o sută de dolari* one hundred dollars; *trei sute de dolari* three hundred dollars; *suta mea de dolari* my sum of one hundred dollars.

A precise number of hundreds or thousands is indicated by the corresponding cardinal numeral that precedes the plural forms without article *sute* or *mii*: *200 – două sute*, *2.000 – două mii*, *300 – trei sute*, *3.000 – trei mii*, *400 – patru sute*, *4.000 – patru mii*, etc.

The combination of a numeral **bigger than 9** with the numeral *sute* is not possible in Romanian. Numerals like 2.000, 3.000, etc. cannot be expressed as 'twenty hundred', 'thirty hundred', but only as 'two thousand', 'three thousand': *două mii*, *trei mii*, etc. The numeral *mii* can be preceded by any number smaller than *o mie*. When the number of thousands (placed before *mii*) is bigger than *19*, the numeral *mii* is preceded by the preposition *de*: *19.000 – nouăsprezece mii*, but *20.000 douăzeci de mii*.

When they are not preceded by another numeral, *sute* and *mii* designate a large but indefinite number :

Aici sunt sute / mii de oameni. there are hundreds / thousands of people here.

3.5.2.6. The cardinal numerals 1.000.000 and 1.000.000.000

NOTE: In Romanian the groups of figures representing thousands are not separated by commas, but they can be separated by dots: e.g. "one million" is written 1.000.000.

	1.000.000		1.000.000.000	
	singular	plural	singular	plural
N. – Ac.	<i>un milion; milionul</i>	<i>niște milioane; milioanele</i>	<i>un miliard; miliardul</i>	<i>niște miliarde; miliardele</i>
G. – D.	<i>unui milion; milionului</i>	<i>unor milioane; milioanelor</i>	<i>unui miliard; miliardului</i>	<i>unor miliarde; miliardelor</i>

The cardinal numerals *milion* million and *miliard* billion act as neuter nouns ending in a consonant, with the plural in *-e*, i.e. their forms change according to number and case, they can take the definite or indefinite article, and can be modified by adjectives or pronominal adjectives.

A precise numbers of millions or billions is indicated by the corresponding cardinal numeral that precedes the plural forms without article *milioane* and *miliarde* : *2.000.000 – două milioane*, *5.000.000.000 – cinci miliarde*, etc. When the number of millions or billions is bigger than 19, the numerals *milioane* and *miliarde* are preceded by the preposition *de* : *19.000.000 nouăsprezece milioane*, but *20.000.000 douăzeci de milioane*.

The nouns coming after *un milion*, *un miliard*, as well as after the numerals composed with *milioane*, *miliarde*, are preceded by the preposition *de*: *un milion de lei* one million lei, *trei miliarde de dolari* three billion dollars, *milionul meu de lire* my one million pounds.

When they are not preceded by another numeral, *milioane* and *miliarde* designate a large but indefinite number:

Aici sunt milioane de persoane. There are millions of people here.

3.5.2.7. Compound cardinal numerals over 100

In compound numerals bigger than 100, the elements form a simple string without a connector : *101 – o sută unu*, *113 – o sută treisprezece*, *1.025 – o mie douăzeci și cinci*, *1.003 – o mie trei*, *1.019 – o mie nouăsprezece*, *1.037 – o mie treizeci și șapte*, *1.245 – o mie două sute patruzeci și cinci*, etc.

The preposition *de* after numerals over 100 is not required if the numeral in the final position is not bigger than 19 (such as: *101 o sută unu*, *206 două sute șase*, *1.018 o mie optsprezece*, *3.519 trei mii cinci sute nouăsprezece*): *105 cărți – o sută cinci cărți*, *1319 cărți – o mie trei sute nouăsprezece cărți*, etc. If a numeral between 20 and 99 is in the final position, the preposition *de* must be used: *120 de cărți – o sută douăzeci de cărți*, *1322 de cărți – o mie trei sute douăzeci și două de cărți*, etc.

3.5.2.8. The genitive and the dative of the cardinal numerals

Some cardinal numerals form the genitive-dative with case endings, like *unul*, *un*, *una*, *o* one. The cardinal numerals *sută*, *mie*, *milion* and *miliard* formally act as nouns and construct the cases accordingly. The cardinal numerals bigger than 1 form the genitive-dative with prepositions.

The genitive-dative forms of the cardinal numerals *unul*, *una* are *unuia*, *unei* (in the genitive they are preceded by the possessive article *al*, *a*, *ai*, *ale* if the genitival construction is independent or remote):

Rezultatul unuia / unei a fost corect. The result of one (person) was correct. (genitive, close to the modified noun)

Rezultatul corect este numai al unuia. The correct result is only (the result) of one (person). (genitive, remote to the modified noun)

I-am povestit despre tine numai unuia / unei. I told things about you only to one (person). (dative)

The genitive-dative forms of the cardinal numerals *un*, *o* (that precede a noun) are *unui*, *unei* (in the genitive they are preceded by the possessive article *al*, *a*, *ai*, *ale* if the genitival construction is independent or remote):

Numai rezultatul unui student / unei studente a fost corect. The result of only one student was correct. (genitive, close to the modified noun)

Rezultatul corect este numai al unui student / al unei studente, toți ceilalți au greșit. The correct result belongs to only one student, the others are wrong. (genitive, remote to the modified noun)

I-am povestit despre tine numai unui student / unei studente. I told things about you only to one student. (dative)

The cardinal numerals *o sută*, *o mie*, *un milion*, *un miliard* act as feminine (*sută*, *mie*) and neuter (*milion*, *miliard*) nouns and their declension follows the regular nominal pattern:

Au distribuit alimente unei sutei de oameni, dar soarta milioanelor flămânde nu preocupă, de fapt, nimeni.
They distributed food to one hundred people, but the fate of the hungry millions does not, in fact, concern anybody.

The genitive and dative case functions of all the other cardinal numerals are expressed in prepositional constructions. The noun/pronoun preceded by a cardinal numeral (in the simple structure **numeral** + **noun** or in the complex structure **numeral** + *dintre* + **noun/pronoun**) will be preceded by the preposition *a* to express the function of the genitive and by the preposition *la* to express the function of the dative:

- genitive:

Am corectat testele a trei studenți / studente. I corrected the tests of three students.

Am corectat testele a trei dintre studenți / studente. I corrected the tests of three of the students.

Am corectat testele a trei dintre ei / ele. I corrected the tests of three of them.

- dative:

Le-am dat test la opt studenți / studente. I gave a test to eight students.

Le-am dat test la opt dintre dintre studenți / studente. I gave a test to eight of the students.

Le-am dat test la opt dintre ei / ele. I gave a test to eight of them.

The same prepositional constructions can be used to form the genitive-dative plural forms of some interrogative and indefinite pronouns related to the idea of quantity, even if these pronouns have their own inflected genitive-dative forms.

3.5.3. Other types of numerals

There are a series of numerals, most of which are analytic structures formed on the basis of the cardinal numerals. These are: the distributive, the collective, the adverbial, the multiplicative and the fractional numerals.

3.5.3.1. The distributive numeral

The distributive numeral (indicating several identical groups of objects) is formed with the cardinal numeral preceded by *câte*: *câte doi* / *câte două* two by two, *câte trei* three by three, etc.:

Sunt examinați câte cinci candidați la postul de asistent pe zi. Candidates in groups of five are examined for the position of assistant each day.

In the accusative, the distributive numeral can work with or without prepositions:

Am oferit fiecărui copil câte două mere. I offered each child two apples.

Propun să formăm grupuri de lucru de câte patru. I propose we form working groups of 4 each.

To express the functions of the genitive the distributive numeral is preceded by the preposition *a*. To express the functions of the dative it is preceded by the preposition *la*:

Nu pot fi aprobate decât cererile a câte trei din fiecare grupă. The requests of only three people from each class can be approved.

Am distribuit materiale didactice la câte trei din fiecare grupă. I distributed learning materials to three in each class.

In order to intensify the distributive meaning and to add the idea of repetitiveness, the cardinal numerals (mainly the small numbers) can have a double expression, before and after the component *câte*:

— *Copii, mergeți doi câte doi!* Children, walk two by two!

3.5.3.2. The collective numeral

The collective numeral (indicating the accumulation of elements belonging to a numerically defined group of objects) has a variety of forms.

For a group of two members ('both'), the collective numeral is *amândoi* for the masculine and *amândouă* for the feminine. The neologic synonyms: *ambii* / *ambele* are mainly used in the administrative or journalistic style of the language. The genitive-dative form of *amândoi* / *amândouă* is *amândurora*, of *ambii* is *ambilor*, and of *ambele* is *ambelor*. The independent genitive form is preceded by the genitival article *al, a, ai, ale*:

La nuntă au venit rudele și prietenii amândurora. Friends and family of them both attended the wedding.

Le-am oferit flori ambilor profesori. I gave both professors flowers.

Le-am oferit flori ambelor domnișoare. I gave both young ladies flowers.

For groups formed of three elements and more, the most frequent structure is: *toți / toate* + **cardinal numeral**: *toți trei / toate trei* all three, *toți patru / toate patru* all four, *toți nouă / toate nouă* all nine, etc. The nouns preceded by these collective numerals will always take the definite article:

Au răspuns invitației toți zece. All ten of them replied to the invitation.

S-au închis toate trei teatrele din oraș. All three theatres in the city have closed.

In the structure *toți / toate* + **cardinal numeral**, the cardinal numeral can be preceded by the demonstrative article *cei* / *cele*: *toți cei cinci delegați* all the five delegates, *toate cele șapte profesoare* all the seven teachers, etc. If the collective numeral includes the elements *cei* or *cele*, the noun preceded by such a numeral will not take the definite article.

The accusative of collective numerals is used with or without prepositions. When used a direct object, the preposition *pe* and the double expression of the direct object are required only when the nouns designate persons:

Le-am văzut pe toate trei candidatele / pe toate cele trei candidate la poziția vacantă. I saw all three / all the three candidates for the position available.

Am văzut toate trei cărțile / toate cele trei cărți trimise de editură. I saw all three / all the three books sent by the publishing house.

If the direct object is an independent collective numeral (without a noun), the preposition *pe* and the double expression of the direct object is required regardless the human / non-human semantic feature of the noun implied in the discourse:

— ***Le-ai văzut pe toate candidatele?*** Did you see all the candidates? — ***Da, le-am văzut pe toate trei.*** Yes, I saw all three of them.

— ***Ai văzut toate cărțile?*** Did you see all the books? — ***Da, le-am văzut pe toate trei.*** Yes, I saw all three of them.

The genitive-dative form of this structure will occur with the genitive-dative of the first two elements (only the complex structure with *cei, cele* is used in this genitive-dative): ***tuturor celor*** + **cardinal numeral** (+ **noun in the nominative**). The elements *tuturor* and *celor* do not have different forms for masculine and feminine, but the numeral *doisprezece / douăsprezece* will agree with the modified noun:

Aici sunt mapele tuturor celor zece delegați. Here are the folders of all ten delegates. (genitive, masc.)

Aici sunt mapele tuturor celor zece reprezentante ale Uniunii Europene. Here are the folders of all ten representatives of the European Union. (genitive, fem.)

Aici sunt mapele tuturor celor doisprezece delegați. Here are the folders of all twelve delegates. (genitive, masc.)

Le vom oferi materiale despre organizația noastră tuturor celor douăsprezece reprezentante ale țărilor din Europa de Est. We will give brochures about our organization to all the twelve representatives of the countries from Eastern Europe. (dative, fem.)

The collective numerals can also form the genitive with the preposition *a* and the dative with the preposition *la* (the structure without *cel, cea* can also be used in this genitive-dative):

Am inclus în proiect propunerile a toți cinci delegații / a toți cei cinci delegați. We included into the project the proposals of all five delegates. (genitive)

Le-am comunicat ora de începere a sesiunii de mâine la toți zece / la toți cei zece. I told all ten of them the beginning hour of the tomorrow session. (dative)

The collective forms of 'three' and 'four' can also be formed with the components *tus-* or *câteși-*: ***tustrei*** (masculine) ***tustrele*** (feminine and neuter), ***tuspatru, câteșitrei*** (masculine), ***câteșitrele*** (feminine), ***câteșipatru***. However, these forms are not frequent in standard speech. They are used mainly with nouns designating persons.

Au venit ieri tustrei. All three of them came yesterday.

Nu-mi place când dau buzna peste mine câteșipatru. I don't like it when all four of them rush in and bother me.

3.5.3.3. The adverbial numeral

The repetitive meaning (once, twice, three times, etc.) is expressed by the adverbial numeral which has the following structure: ***de*** + **cardinal numeral** + ***ori*** (the plural of the feminine noun *oară*). The cardinal numeral 2 will be thus used in the feminine: ***de două ori***. If the cardinal numeral is bigger than 20, the noun *ori* will be preceded by the preposition *de*. The equivalent of the English 'once' is ***o dată***. The question for the adverbial numeral is ***De câte ori?*** The numerals *zece, sută, mie, milion, miliard* can also function in the plural in this structure: ***de sute de ori*** hundreds of times, ***de mii de ori*** thousands of times, ***de milioane de ori*** millions of times, ***de miliarde de ori*** billions of times.

În ultima lună ne-am văzut doar de două ori. Last month we only met twice.

— ***De câte ori să-ți spun că nu pot să vin mâine la tine? Ți-am spus de sute de ori!*** How many times should I tell you that I cannot come to your place tomorrow. I told you that hundreds of times.

3.5.3.4. The multiplicative numeral

The multiplicative numerals show the progressive growth of a value ('twice as much', 'three times more', etc.). They are formed by derivation from the cardinal numeral with the prefix *în-* and the suffix *-it*:

<i>doi</i>	→ <i>îndoît</i>
<i>trei</i>	→ <i>întreit</i>
<i>patru</i>	→ <i>împătrit</i>
<i>cinci</i>	→ <i>încincit</i>
<i>zece</i>	→ <i>înzecit</i>
<i>(o) sută</i>	→ <i>însutit</i>
<i>(o) mie</i>	→ <i>înmiit</i>

- if the cardinal numeral ends in *-i*, the final *-i* disappears before the suffix *-it* (*trei* – *întreit*)
- if the first sound of the cardinal numeral is *p-*, the prefix *in-* will change into *îm-* (*patru* – *împătrit*)

Only some cardinal numerals form multiplicative numerals. The most frequent are those given above. Some multiplicative numerals have more recent synonyms: *îndoît* = *dublu*, *întreit* = *triplu*, *împătrit* = *cvadruplu*, *încincit* = *cvintuplu*, *înzecit* = *sextuplu*. In contemporary Romanian the neologisms are more frequent than their synonyms.

The multiplicative numerals can have an adjectival or an adverbial function. When used as adjectives, they agree with the modified noun:

Anul trecut, când am lucrat la Banca Mondială, am câștigat triplu / întreit. Last year, when I worked at the World Bank, I earned thrice as much as before.

Anul trecut am avut un câștig triplu / întreit. Last year I made three times more money.

Anul trecut am avut câștiguri triple / întreite. Last year my earnings were three times bigger.

Adverbial numerals followed by the comparative of the adjective *mare* or of the adverb *mult* are replaced frequently by the multiplicative numerals:

am câștigat triplu / întreit ~ am câștigat de trei ori mai mult

am avut un câștig triplu (întreit) ~ am avut un câștig de trei ori mai mare

am avut câștiguri triple (întreite) ~ am avut câștiguri de trei ori mai mari

3.5.3.5. The fractional numeral

The fractional numeral (indicating parts of a unit) is formed by derivation from the cardinal numeral with the suffix *-ime*:

<i>doi</i>	→ <i>doime:</i>	$\frac{1}{2}$ o doime
<i>trei</i>	→ <i>treime:</i>	$\frac{1}{3}$ o treime, $\frac{2}{3}$ două treimi
<i>patru</i>	→ <i>pătrime:</i>	$\frac{1}{4}$ o pătrime, $\frac{3}{4}$ trei pătrimi
<i>cinci</i>	→ <i>cincime:</i>	$\frac{1}{5}$ o cincime, $\frac{4}{5}$ patru cincimi
<i>șase</i>	→ <i>șesime:</i>	$\frac{1}{6}$ o șesime, $\frac{3}{6}$ trei șesimi
<i>șapte</i>	→ <i>șeptime:</i>	$\frac{1}{7}$ o șeptime, $\frac{6}{7}$ șase șeptimi
<i>opt</i>	→ <i>optime:</i>	$\frac{1}{8}$ o optime, $\frac{4}{8}$ patru optimi
<i>nouă</i>	→ <i>noime</i> .	$\frac{1}{9}$ o noime, $\frac{7}{9}$ șapte noimi
<i>zece</i>	→ <i>zecime:</i>	$\frac{1}{10}$ o zecime, $\frac{3}{10}$ trei zecimi
<i>(o) sută</i>	→ <i>sutime:</i>	$\frac{1}{100}$ o sutime, $\frac{30}{100}$ treizeci de sutimi
<i>(o) mie</i>	→ <i>măime:</i>	$\frac{1}{1000}$ o măime, $\frac{4}{1000}$ patru măimi

- if the cardinal numeral ends in a vowel, the final vowel disappears before the suffix *-ime* (*doi – doime*)
- if the number of fractions is bigger than 'one', the fractional numeral will be used in the plural (the fractional numeral functions as a feminine noun): *o optime – trei optimi*.
- if the cardinal numeral is bigger than 20, the fractional numeral will be preceded by the preposition *de*: *două cincimi (2/5), douăzeci de sutimi (20/100)*.

The genitive and the dative of the fractional numerals are formed as for the cardinal numeral: *rezultatele a o treime / unei treimi dintre candidați* the results of one third of the candidates, *am telefonat la două treimi dintre ei* I called two thirds of them.

The fractional numeral can be preceded by the interrogative *câte* or by quantitative indefinites, such as: *atâtea, multe, câteva, nenumărate, puține*:

Rezultatul atletei din SUA a fost a fost mai bun cu câteva sutimi de secundă decât al celei din Germania.

The result of the athlete from the USA was better than the result of the athlete from Germany by several hundredths of a second.

The fractions can be expressed, especially when verbalizing mathematical operations, without using the fractional numeral, with the cardinal numerals and the prepositions *pe* or *supra*: *2/3 – doi pe trei, doi supra trei, 5/8 – cinci pe opt, cinci supra opt*, etc. The fractional numerals *doime, treime, pătrime, optime, șaisprezecime* etc. are terminology used in music.

The percentage (%) and the permillage (‰) are expressed with the structure **cardinal numeral + la + sută / mie**: *10% zece la sută, 20 % douăzeci la sută, 80 % optzeci la sută, 10‰ zece la mie, 50‰ cincizeci la mie, 75‰ șaptezeci și cinci la mie*.

Decimal fractions are not written with a **decimal point** in Romanian, but with a **comma – virgulă**. Thus, a number like 1.5 will be written 1,5 and will be said as *unu virgulă cinci*, and so on: *13,75 – treisprezece virgulă șaptezeci și cinci, 845,4 – opt sute patruzeci și cinci virgulă patru*, etc.

To express the functions of the genitive the fractional numeral is preceded by the preposition *a*. To express the functions of the dative it is preceded by the preposition *la*:

Am aici notele a o treime dintre studenți. I have here the grades of one third of the students. (genitive)

Le-am dat note mari numai la o treime dintre ei. I gave high grades to only one third of them. (dative)

3.5.4. The numerical approximation

The approximation of a certain quantity / number of objects is expressed in constructions with the elements *aproximativ, circa, în jur de, cam, vreo* + the structure including the numeral. *În jur de, cam, vreo* are mainly used in colloquial speech, while *aproximativ* and *circa* are more frequent in documents, mass-media texts, etc.:

La conferință au venit aproximativ 15 persoane din diverse orașe. Approx. 15 people from various cities came to the conference.

Proiectul prevede restaurarea a circa 20 de clădiri. The project states the restoring of approx. 20 buildings.

În sală sunt în jur de 50 de studenți. There are around 50 students in this classroom.

— *Cât am fost plecat? Nu mai știu precis, cam patru luni.* — How long was I gone? I don't remember exactly, about 4 months.

Trebuie să luăm vreo două kilograme de fursecuri pentru atâta lume. We'll have to buy about four pounds of cookies for such a big crowd.

Approximation can also be rendered by a structure made of two close cardinal numerals that are either hyphenated or separated by a comma:

În trei-patru zile va fi foarte cald afară. It will be very hot in three or four days.

Ia și tu două-trei kile de mere, sa ne țină până luni. Go ahead and buy four or five pounds of apples to last until Monday.

If the first numeral is *un* or *o* one, the noun will come after this numeral:

Într-un an, doi n-o s-o mai recunoști! In a year or two you will not recognize her!

Stăm la Sinaia o zi-două și pe urmă mergem la Brașov. We are in Sinaia for a day or two, and then we are going to Brașov.

To indicate a large quantity or number of objects that exceeds a round standard, the numeral is preceded by such elements as *peste* (*puțin peste, mult peste*), *mai mult de*, *mai bine de* or followed by such elements as *și ceva*, *și mai mult*, *și mai bine*:

Am de citit peste 100 de pagini pe zi. I have to read over 100 pages a day.

Întâlnirea a durat puțin peste două ore. The meeting lasted a little over 2 hours.

A stat mai mult de trei ore la birou. He spent more than three hours in his office.

Sunt mai bine de opt kilometri până la cabană! There are more than 8 kilometers to the cabin.

I-ai dat mai mult de un milion! You gave him more than one million!

Am dat pe cărțile astea opt dolari și ceva! Incredibil de ieftin! I paid eight dollars and change for these books. They are incredibly cheap!

Până vine mai sunt două ore și mai bine! There still are more than two hours left until she comes!

To indicate a lower quantity or number of objects than the precise one given, the elements *aproape*, *sub*, *mai puțin de*, *sub* are used before the cardinal numeral:

Au venit aproape cincizeci de persoane la petrecere. Almost 50 people came to the party.

Textul acesta are sub o sută de pagini. This text is under 100 pages.

Mai sunt mai puțin de trei minute până intrăm în direct! We have less than three minutes before we go live!

3.5.5. Ordinal numerals

3.5.5.1. Forming the ordinal numerals

The ordinal numeral (indicating the position of an object in a series) is adjectival, which means that it agrees with the modified noun in gender, number and case. The question the ordinal numerals answer is a form of the interrogative-relative pronoun *cât*: *al câtelea?* (masculine) and *a câta?* (feminine).

number	cardinal numeral	ordinal numeral	
		masculine	feminine
1 st	<i>unu, una, o, două</i>	<i>întâiul, primul</i>	<i>întâia, prima</i>
2 nd	<i>doi, două</i>	<i>al doilea (secund)</i>	<i>a doua (secundă)</i>
3 rd	<i>trei</i>	<i>al treilea (terț)</i>	<i>a treia (terță)</i>
4 th	<i>patru</i>	<i>al patrulea</i>	<i>a patra</i>
5 th	<i>cinci</i>	<i>al cincilea</i>	<i>a cincea</i>
6 th	<i>șase</i>	<i>al șaselea</i>	<i>a șasea</i>
7 th	<i>șapte</i>	<i>al șaptelea</i>	<i>a șaptea</i>
8 th	<i>opt</i>	<i>al optulea</i>	<i>a opta</i>
9 th	<i>nouă</i>	<i>al nouălea</i>	<i>a noua</i>
10 th	<i>zece</i>	<i>al zecelea</i>	<i>a zecea</i>
11 th	<i>unsprezece</i>	<i>al unsprezecelea</i>	<i>a unsprezecea</i>
12 th	<i>doisprezece</i>	<i>al doisprezecelea</i>	<i>a douăsprezecea</i>
13 th	<i>treisprezece</i>	<i>al treisprezecelea</i>	<i>a treisprezecea</i>
14 th	<i>paisprezece</i>	<i>al paisprezecelea</i>	<i>a paisprezecea</i>
15 th	<i>cincisprezece</i>	<i>al cincisprezecelea</i>	<i>a cincisprezecea</i>
16 th	<i>șaisprezece</i>	<i>al șaisprezecelea</i>	<i>a șaisprezecea</i>

17 th	<i>șaptesprezece</i>	<i>al șaptesprezecelea</i>	<i>a șaptesprezecea</i>
18 th	<i>optsprezece</i>	<i>al optsprezecelea</i>	<i>a optsprezecea</i>
19 th	<i>nouăsprezece</i>	<i>al nouăsprezecelea</i>	<i>a nouăsprezecea</i>
20 th	<i>douăzeci</i>	<i>al douăzecilea</i>	<i>a douăzecea</i>
21 st	<i>douăzeci și unu</i>	<i>al douăzeci și unulea</i>	<i>a douăzeci și una</i>
26 th	<i>douăzeci și șase</i>	<i>al douăzeci și șaselea</i>	<i>a douăzeci și șasea</i>
30 th	<i>treizeci</i>	<i>al treizecilea</i>	<i>a treizecea</i>
40 th	<i>patruzeci</i>	<i>al patruzecilea</i>	<i>a patruzecea</i>
50 th	<i>cincizeci</i>	<i>al cincizecilea</i>	<i>a cincizecea</i>
100 th	<i>o sută</i>	<i>al (o) sutălea</i>	<i>a (o) suta</i>
1,000 th	<i>o mie</i>	<i>al (o) miilea</i>	<i>a (o) mia</i>
1,000,000 th	<i>un milion</i>	<i>al (un) milionulea</i>	<i>a (o) milioanea</i>

- the ordinal numeral has different forms for masculine and feminine
- except *primul / prima* and *întâiul / întâia* the ordinal numerals are formed by derivation from the cardinal numerals with the suffix *-lea* (masc.) or *-a* (fem.). They are always preceded by the possessive article *al* (for the masculine) or *a* (for the feminine): *șapte* > *al șaptelea / a șaptea*
- if the cardinal numeral ends in *-ă* or *-u*, the suffix *-a* replaces the final vowel of the cardinal numeral: *două* > *a doua*; *nouă* > *a noua*; *patru* > *a patra*
- if the cardinal numeral ends in a consonant, the vowel *-u-* is inserted between that consonant and the suffix *-lea*: *opt* > *al optulea*; *milion* > *al milionulea*
- in a compound numeral only the last number in the series is ordinal, but the whole structure takes the possessive article *al* or *a*: *22nd* = *al douăzeci și doilea / a douăzeci și doua*, *123rd* = *al o sută douăzeci și treilea / a o sută douăzeci și treia*, etc.
- in the process of derivation phonetic and / or graphic changes occur in the stem: *milion* > *a milioanea*, *cinci* > *a cincea*, *douăzeci* > *a douăzecea*

The usage of the cardinal numerals *secund / secundă* and *terț / terță* is limited to such combinations as: *locul secund*, *echipa secundă*, *terță parte*, *terță persoană*.

The ordinal numeral is often preceded by the adjectival article *cel / cea* and the preposition *de*: *cel de-al doilea / cea de-a doua*; *cel de-al treilea / cea de-a treia*; etc. The ordinal numerals *întâiul / întâia* change into *cel dintâi / cea dintâi*. The ordinal numerals *primul / prima*, *secund / secundă* and *terț / terță* cannot be preceded by *cel de-* / *cea de-*.

The difference between the ordinal numerals with or without *cel de-* / *cea de-* is not relevant in the nominative-accusative, since the two have the same meaning and they are stylistically equivalent:

Al treilea concurent a evoluat mai bine decât al doilea.* = *Cel de-al treilea concurent a evoluat mai bine decât cel de-al doilea. The third competitor performed better than the second one.

The forms with the adjectival article are very important in declension, since the article *cel / cea* is the element that changes in the genitive-dative forms:

Juriul i-a acordat celui de-al treilea concurent note foarte bune. The jury gave to the third competitor very good grades.

3.5.5.2. Declension of ordinal numerals

The ordinal numerals indicating the first position (*întâiul / întâia, primul / prima*) have forms both for singular and the plural. Since these numerals have the definite article incorporated, the declined element will be the article:

	singular		plural	
	masculine	feminine	masculine	feminine
N.-A.	<i>întâiul, primul</i>	<i>întâia, prima</i>	<i>întâii, primii</i>	<i>întâile, primele</i>
G.-D.	<i>întâiului, primului</i>	<i>întâii, primei</i>	<i>întâilor, primilor</i>	<i>întâilor, primelor</i>

Numele întâiului copil este Dan. The name of the first baby is Dan.

Numele primei fiice este Elena. The name of the first daughter is Elena.

Primilor li s-a spus deja ce trebuie să facă. The first ones have already been told what to do.

Le-am explicat ce trebuie să facă primelor grupe de studenți. I've explained to the first group of students what they are supposed to do.

In the genitive-dative, the element that changes is the adjectival article *cel / cea*:

masculine		feminine	
N.-A.	G.-D.	N.-A.	G.-D.
<i>cel dintâi</i>	<i>celui dintâi</i>	<i>cea dintâi</i>	<i>celeii dintâi</i>
<i>cel de-al doilea</i>	<i>celui de-al doilea</i>	<i>cea de-a doua</i>	<i>celeii de-a doua</i>
<i>cel de-al treilea</i>	<i>celui de-al treilea</i>	<i>cea de-a treia</i>	<i>celeii de-a treia</i>
<i>cel de-al patrulea</i>	<i>celui de-al patrulea</i>	<i>cea de-a patra</i>	<i>celeii de-a patra</i>

When they modify a noun, the ordinal numerals in the genitive-dative generally precede the noun they modify. The modified noun will not take an article:

Copiii celei de-a doua surori a mamei sunt mari deja. The children of my mother's second sister are big kids by now.

Dă-i dicționarul acesta celui de-al patrulea student din rândul întâi, te rog! Please pass this dictionary to the fourth student in the first row!

There are, however, situations when the ordinal numeral comes in post-position and without the adjectival article, in general with such nouns as: *clasă, an, grupă, etaj, rând, lecție, exercițiu*, etc. (except the ordinal numerals with the noun *clasă*, all the others can be replaced with cardinal numerals). In such cases the ordinal numeral does not change in the genitive-dative:

Elevii clasei a douăsprezecea se pregatesc intens pentru bacalaureat. The 12th grade students are preparing intensively for the baccalaureate exam.

Studenții anului al treilea / anului trei sunt plecați în excursie de studiu în Maramureș. The third-year students are now on a field trip in Maramureș.

Stai tu, te rog, pe locul din capul rândului al cincilea / rândului cinci. Please be seated on the first place of the fifth row.

3.5.5.3. Usage of the ordinal numerals

Ordinal numerals can be used independently, as noun substitutes :

Sportivul din Franța a ieșit al treilea. The athlete from France finished third.

Cel de-al treilea este sportivul din Franța. The third one is the athlete from France.

They can also function as noun modifiers, in pre-or post-position. When the ordinal numeral precedes the noun, the noun does not take the definite article, but it can take the indefinite article placed before the ordinal numeral (if the numeral is preceded by the adjectival numeral the noun will not take any article):

Aceasta este a treia încercare. = *Aceasta este cea de-a treia încercare.* This is the third trial.

Aceasta este o a treia încercare. This is the third trial.

When the ordinal numeral comes after the noun, the noun takes the definite article (the ordinal numeral with the adjectival article is not frequent in post-position):

Aceasta este încercarea a treia. (= *Aceasta este încercarea cea de-a treia.*) This is the third trial.

The ordinal numeral *primul* / *prima* is most frequently placed before the noun:

Primul examen a fost foarte greu. The first exam was very difficult.

Prima lucrare a fost ușoară. The first test was easy.

The ordinal numeral *întâiul* / *întâia* can precede the noun or come after the noun. When it precedes the noun the numeral *întâiul* / *întâia* always takes the definite article:

Nu am uitat întâiul sărut. I haven't forgotten the first kiss.

Este vorba despre întâia mișcare. It's all about the first move.

When it comes after the noun, the ordinal numeral *întâiul* / *întâia* does not take an article:

Eu stau la etajul întâi. I live on the first floor.

Ea este în clasa întâi. She is in the first grade.

Note that *primul* and *întâiul* cannot replace each other in all contexts. For instance, we can say *primul sărut – întâiul sărut*, *prima mișcare – întâia mișcare* and keep the same meaning, but *clasa întâi* and *prima clasă* have different meanings: *clasa întâi* means 'first grade', while *prima clasă* means 'the first classroom', like in: *prima clasă pe dreapta* the first classroom on the right.

Combined with the noun used to form the adverbial numerals (*dată* / *oară*), the ordinal numerals form adverbial collocations: *prima dată* / *prima oară* the first time, *a doua oară* the second time, *a treia oară* the third time, *a zecea oară* the tenth time, etc. Combined with the noun *parte* part, if they precede this noun, the ordinal numerals indicate a fraction: *a treia parte* one third, *a cincea parte* one fifth, *a zecea parte* one tenth, etc. If the ordinal numeral comes after the noun *parte*, the regular ordinal meaning is preserved: *partea a treia a sonatei* the third part of the sonata.

To indicate parts or sections in books, plays, ballets, operas, movies (*capitol* chapter, *volum* volume, *act* act, *scenă* scene), the speaker should use ordinal numerals: *volumul întâi* the first volume, *capitolul al doilea* the second chapter, *actul al treilea* the third act, etc. However, in colloquial language cardinal numerals are frequently used, so it is rather common to hear: *volumul unu* the first volume, *capitolul doi* the second chapter, *actul trei* the third act, etc.

The ordinal numerals can replace the name of the month of the year when expressing the date: *02.03.1999 – doi a treia o mie nouă sute nouăzeci și nouă*.

4. VERB

4.1. Introduction to the verb

4.1.1. Basic information about verb and conjugation

Romanian verbs have different forms that show mood, tense, person, number, gender and voice:

- **mood**: five personal moods (indicative, imperative, subjunctive, optative-conditional, and presumptive) and four non-personal moods (infinitive, participle, gerund, supine). Most of these moods have two tenses (present and past); some have only one tense; one of them, the indicative, has eight tenses (one present tense, four past tenses and three future tenses)
- **tense**: present, past and future tenses. The tenses are of two basic kinds. There are simple tenses consisting of one word – the main verb stem plus different suffixes and endings. These include present indicative, imperfect indicative, simple perfect indicative, and pluperfect indicative. There are also compound tenses (consisting of different combinations of auxiliary elements and the infinitive or the past participle of the main verb) – compound perfect indicative, the futures of the indicative, past subjunctive, present and past optative-conditional, present and past presumptive, past infinitive
- **person**: 1st, 2nd and 3rd in the personal moods. There is also the possibility of combining the infinitive and the gerund (non-personal moods) with reflexive pronouns in different persons, which gives these non-personal moods a person-oriented usage
- **number**: singular and plural
- **gender**: masculine, feminine and neuter for the past participle in the passive voice, as well as for the gerund, when used as supplemental predicative element or attribute
- **voice**: active, passive and reflexive.

The complete paradigm of the Romanian verb is structured as follows (the verb *a cânta* to sing, to play an instrument, in the 1st pers. sing. for all the personal moods and in the 2nd pers. sing. in the imperative):

INDICATIVE							
pluperfect <i>cântasem</i>	simple perfect <i>cântai</i>	compound perfect <i>am cântat</i>	imperfect <i>cântam</i>	present <i>cânt</i>	future 1, 2, 3 <i>voi cânta, o să cânt, am să cânt</i>	future perfect <i>voi fi cântat</i>	future in the past <i>aveam să cânt</i>
SUBJUNCTIVE							
past <i>să fi cântat</i>			present <i>să cânt</i>				
OPTATIVE-CONDITIONAL							
past <i>aș fi cântat</i>			present <i>aș cânta</i>				
PRESUMPTIVE							
past <i>oi fi cântat</i>			present <i>oi cânta, oi fi cântând</i>				
IMPERATIVE							
<i>cântă !</i>							
INFINITIVE							
past <i>a fi cântat</i>			present <i>a cânta</i>				
PARTICIPLE							
past <i>cântat</i>							
GERUND							
<i>cântând</i>							
SUPINE							
<i>de cântat</i>							

There is a large number of suffixes and endings, which form tenses and moods, persons and numbers, as well as a series of infixes (*-ez-/-eaz-*; *-esc-/-eșt-*; *-ăsc-/-ășt-*) that appear in the 1st and 4th conjugations. There are homonymous morphemes in the system of the Romanian verb, which leads to the presence of relatively numerous grammatical homonyms and homographs within the verbal paradigm.

Some independent parts of speech become structural elements within certain verbal forms. The preposition *a* functions as a particle that indicates the infinitive mood. The conjunction *să* is used as a morpheme to form the subjunctive, as well as the futures based on the subjunctive.

One of the distinctive features of the verbal conjugation is the presence of numerous auxiliary elements used to form compound tenses and moods: *a avea* to have (*am cântat*, *am să cânt*, *aveam să cânt*), *a fi* to be (*a fi cântat*, *să fi cântat*), *a voi* to want (*voi cânta*), other auxiliary elements (*as cânta*, *o să cânt*, *oi cânta*). Some of the auxiliaries are used to build several verbal forms.

Within the conjugation numerous phonetic mutations (both vowel and consonant changes) occur. They are brought about by the new phonetic context created by inflective suffixes and endings in conjunction with the changing position of the stress.

4.1.2. Identifying the conjugation of a verb

The dictionary form of the verb is the infinitive. The ending of the infinitive indicates the conjugation of the verb. There are four conjugations in Romanian. The final vowel or vowels of the infinitive indicate the conjugation of the verb:

1st conjugation – verbs ending in *-a*: *a cânta* to sing, *a lucra* to work, *a întârzia* to be late, *a parca* to park, etc.

2nd conjugation – verbs ending in *-ea*: *a vedea* to see, *a putea* to be able to, etc.

3rd conjugation – verbs ending in *-e*: *a merge* to walk, to go, *a face* to do, to make, *a umple* to fill up, *a scrie* to write, etc.

4th conjugation – verbs ending in *-i* and *-î*: *a fugi* to run, *a veni* to come, *a opri* to stop, *a locui* to live, *a hotărî* to decide, *a coborî* to climb down, etc.

The most numerous groups are the verbs in *-a* and the verbs in *-i*.

4.1.3. The infinitive

The infinitive is the non-personal verbal mood that names the action. The infinitive is also used to form some compound tenses.

The most common form of infinitive, the so-called “short infinitive”, is preceded by the preposition *a* in the dictionary or in a context in which the infinitive functions independently: *a cânta* to sing, to play an instrument, *a vedea* to see, *a merge* to walk, to go, *a fugi* to run, *a hotărî* to decide.

There is also a form called “long infinitive” or verbal noun, that ends in *-are*, *-ere*, *-ire*, *-âre*, and is used as a noun in Romanian: *cântare* singing, *vedere* vision, *pierdere* loss, *iubire* love, *hotărâre* decision.

The infinitive has a past tense, formed with the present infinitive of the verb *a fi* plus the past participle of the actual verb: *a cânta – a fi cântat* having sung. The past infinitive is rarely used in contemporary Romanian.

The negative form of the infinitive is formed with the negation *nu* inserted after the preposition *a*: *a nu cânta* not to sing, *a nu vedea* not to see, *a nu merge* not to walk, *a nu fugi* not to run; *a nu fi cântat* not having sung, etc.

The stem of the infinitive (the short infinitive without final vowels *-a*, *-ea*, *-e*, *-i/-î*) is the basic form used to form simple tenses with suffixes and endings. The short infinitive (without the preposition *a*) is used to form compound tenses of various moods: future 1 indicative (*voi cânta*), present optative-conditional (*aș cânta*), present presumptive (*oi cânta*).

4.1.4. The past participle

The past participle is formed by replacing the suffix of the infinitive with the suffix of the participle. Phonetic mutations may occur at the end of the stem:

1 st conjugation verbs in <i>-a</i>	-at	<i>a cânta</i> sing – <i>cântat</i> ; <i>a lucra</i> work – <i>lucrat</i> ; <i>a pleca</i> leave – <i>plecat</i>
2 nd conjugation verbs in <i>-ea</i>	-ut	<i>a apărea</i> appear – <i>apărut</i> ; <i>a tăcea</i> keep quiet – <i>tăcut</i> ; <i>a vedea</i> see – <i>văzut</i>
3 rd conjugation verbs in <i>-e</i>	-ut	<i>a începe</i> start – <i>început</i> ; <i>a cere</i> ask, require – <i>cerut</i> ; <i>a trece</i> pass, go by – <i>trecut</i>
	-s	<i>a aduce</i> bring – <i>adus</i> ; <i>a înțelege</i> understand – <i>înțeles</i> ; <i>a merge</i> walk – <i>mers</i> ; <i>a scrie</i> write – <i>scris</i>
	-t	<i>a rupe</i> tear apart – <i>rupt</i> ; <i>a fierbe</i> boil – <i>fiert</i>
4 th conjugation verbs in <i>-i</i>	-it	<i>a dormi</i> sleep – <i>dormit</i> ; <i>a fugi</i> run – <i>fugit</i> ; <i>a ieși</i> get out – <i>ieșit</i>
4 th conjugation verbs in <i>-î</i>	-ât	<i>a coborî</i> climb down – <i>coborât</i> ; <i>a hotărî</i> decide – <i>hotărât</i> ; <i>a urî</i> hate – <i>urât</i>

- the past participle of the verbs ending in *-a*, *-ea*, *-i* and *-î* is formed with the corresponding suffixes **-at**, **-ut**, **-it** and **-ât**, replacing the suffix of the infinitive
- the past participle of the verbs ending in *-e* can take one of the suffixes: **-ut**, **-s**, **-t**. There are no formal criteria to establish what suffix to use to form the past participle of these verbs: *a crede* believe – *crezut*, but *a râde* laugh – *râs*; *a înțelege* understand – *înțeles*, but *a sparge* break – *spart*
- before the suffixes **-s** or **-t**, the final consonant of the stem is dropped: *a spune* tell – *spus*, *a sparge* break – *spart*. Exception: *a rupe* tear apart – *rupt*.

The past participle of the verb *a fi* to be is *fost*. The other irregular verbs form the past participle according to the general rule.

The negative of the past participle is formed by derivation. The prefix *ne-* is added to the affirmative form: *a cunoaște* know – *cunoscut* ≠ *necunoscut*; *a vedea* see – *văzut* ≠ *nevăzut*. There are verbs that do not form a negative past participle. The negative forms of the past participle function only independently, they do not form compound tenses.

The past participle forms of certain verbs (both affirmative and negative) can be used as adjectives, in which capacity they will agree with the noun they modify, will decline, will have degrees of comparison, etc.

The past participle is used to form several compound tenses of various moods : compound perfect indicative (*am cântat*), future perfect indicative (*voi fi cântat*), past subjunctive (*să fi cântat*), past optative conditional (*aș fi cântat*), past presumptive (*oi fi cântat*), past infinitive (*a fi cântat*). The past participle is also used when changing an active verbal construction into a passive one. When used in passive verbal constructions, the past participle takes the gender and number of the subject of the construction.

4.1.5. Auxiliaries used to form the compound tenses

The personal moods that use auxiliary verbal elements to form compound tenses are:

mood and tense	1 st person singular	2 nd person singular	3 rd person singular	1 st person plural.	2 nd person plural	3 rd person plural
indicative, compound perfect	am	ai	a	am	ați	au
indicative, future 1	voi	vei	va	vom	veți	vor
indicative, future 2	o (să)	o (să)	o (să)	o (să)	o (să)	o (să)
indicative, future 3	am (să)	ai (să)	are (să)	avem (să)	aveți (să)	au (să)
indicative, future perfect	voi fi	vei fi	va fi	vom fi	veți fi	vor fi
indicative, future in the past	aveam (să)	aveai (să)	avea (să)	aveam (să)	aveați (să)	aveau (să)
subjunctive past	(să) fi	(să) fi	(să) fi	(să) fi	(să) fi	(să) fi
conditional present	aș	ai	ar	am	ați	ar
conditional past	aș fi	ai fi	ar fi	am fi	ați fi	ar fi
presumptive present	oi	oi	o	om	oți	or
presumptive past	oi fi	oi fi	o fi	om fi	oți fi	or fi

The only non-personal mood that requires an auxiliary element is the infinitive, that uses the auxiliary **fi** to form its past tense.

Some of the auxiliaries are used to build several verbal forms :

- the auxiliary **fi** is a marker of the past tenses; it is used alone or in combination with other auxiliary elements to form the past tense of the subjunctive, conditional and presumptive, the future perfect of the indicative, as well as the past of the infinitive
- the auxiliaries of the future 1 indicative (**voi**, **vei**, **va**, **vom**, **veți**, **vor**) are also used to form the future perfect indicative (**voi fi**, **vei fi**, **va fi**, **vom fi**, **veți fi**, **vor fi**)
- the auxiliaries of the present conditional (**aș**, **ai**, **ar**, **am**, **ați**, **ar**) are also used to form the past conditional (**aș fi**, **ai fi**, **ar fi**, **am fi**, **ați fi**, **ar fi**)
- the auxiliaries of the present presumptive (**oi**, **oi**, **o**, **om**, **oți**, **or**) are also used to form the past presumptive (**oi fi**, **oi fi**, **o fi**, **om fi**, **oți fi**, **or fi**).

Some auxiliaries appear more than once in the paradigm of the same tense, but in different persons and numbers:

am – indicative, compound perfect, 1st pers. sing. and 1st pers. pl.: **eu am cântat, noi am cântat**

o – indicative, future 2, all persons: **eu o să cânt, tu o să cânți, el / ea o să cânte, noi o să cântăm**, etc.

ar – conditional, present, 3rd pers. sing. and 3rd pers. pl.: **el / ea ar cânta, ei / ele ar cânta**
conditional, past, 3rd pers. sing. and 3rd pers. pl.: **el / ea ar fi cântat, ei / ele ar fi cântat**

oi – presumptive, present, 1st pers. sing. and 2nd pers. sing.: **eu oi cânta, tu oi cânta**
presumptive past, 1st pers. sing. and 2nd pers. sing.: **eu oi fi cântat, tu oi fi cântat**

There are homonymous auxiliary elements that appear in different tenses of the same mood or of different moods, in different persons and numbers:

am	<p>indicative, compound perfect, 1st pers. sing. and pl.: <u>Eu am cântat un cântec românesc.</u> I sang a Romanian song.; <u>Noi am cântat un cântec românesc.</u> We sang a Romanian song.</p> <p>indicative, future 3, 1st pers. sing.: <u>Eu am să cânt un cântec românesc.</u> I shall sing a Romanian song.</p> <p>optative-conditional, present, 1st pers. pl.: <u>Noi am cânta un cântec românesc, dacă am ști vreunul.</u> We would sing a Romanian song if we knew one.</p> <p>optative-conditional, past, 1st pers. pl.: <u>Noi am fi cântat un cântec românesc dacă am fi știut vreunul.</u> We would have sung a Romanian song if we had known one.</p>
ai	<p>indicative, compound perfect, 2nd pers. sing.: <u>Tu ai călătorit mult.</u> You traveled a lot.</p> <p>indicative, future 3, 2nd pers. sing.: <u>Tu ai să călătorești mult.</u> You will travel a lot.</p> <p>optative-conditional, present, 2nd pers. sing.: <u>Tu ai călători mult dacă ai avea bani.</u> You would travel a lot if you had money.</p> <p>optative-conditional, past, 2nd pers. sing.: <u>Tu ai fi călătorit mult dacă ai fi avut bani.</u> You would have traveled a lot if you had had money.</p>
ați	<p>indicative, compound perfect, 2nd pers. pl.: <u>Voi ați mâncat pește în Delta Dunării.</u> You ate fish when you were in the Danube Delta.</p> <p>optative-conditional, present, 2nd pers. pl.: <u>Voi ați mânca pește dacă v-ar plăcea.</u> You would eat fish if you liked it.</p> <p>optative-conditional, past, 2nd pers. pl.: <u>Voi ați fi mâncat pește dacă ați fi venit cu noi în Delta Dunării.</u> You would have eaten fish, if you would have come with us to the Danube Delta.</p>
au	<p>indicative, compound perfect, 3rd pers. pl.: <u>Eu au venit ieri.</u> They arrived yesterday.</p> <p>indicative, future 3, 3rd pers. pl.: <u>Ei au să vină mâine.</u> They will arrive tomorrow.</p>
o	<p>indicative, future 2, all persons: <u>Eu o să fiu acasă.</u> I will be at home. <u>Tu o să fii acasă.</u> You will be at home. etc.</p> <p>presumptive, present, 3rd pers. sing.: <u>Ea o fi acasă.</u> Maybe she is at home. / She might be at home. / She is probably at home.</p> <p>presumptive, past, 3rd pers. sing.: <u>Ea o fi fost acasă.</u> She was probably at home. / She might have been at home.</p>

4.1.6. Infixes

Some verbs of the 1st and 4th conjugation can take, in the singular (all persons) and in the 3rd person plural an infix between the stem and the ending :

- the verbs in **-a** (1st conjugation) can take the infix **-ez-** / **-eaz-** / **[-az-]**
- the verbs in **-i** (4th conjugation) can take the infix **-esc-** / **[-easc-, -asc-]** / **-eșt-**
- the verbs in **-î** (4th conjugation) can take infix **-ăsc-** / **[-asc-]** / **-ășt-**

The moods and tenses where these infixes occur are:

- indicative: present, future 2, future 3
- subjunctive: present
- imperative : 2nd person, singular, affirmative.

4.1.7. Verbal homonyms and homographs

Different simple verbal forms in certain paradigms of the personal moods can be identical or partly identical (identical written form and different pronunciation). The subject personal pronoun is usually omitted in Romanian, and some of the homonyms are forms of the same person, but in different tenses. Therefore grammatical verbal homonyms and homographs can be identified correctly only by using the information offered by the context or by the position of the stress.

4.1.7.1. Verbal homonyms

The most frequent verbal homonyms are:

- **verbs of 1st conjugation – present indicative, 3rd pers. sing. = present indicative, 3rd pers. pl.:**
el / ea cântă he / she sings = *ei / ele cântă* they sing
el / ea intră he / she enters = *ei / ele intră* they enter
el / ea întârzie he / she is late = *ei / ele întârzie* they are late
el / ea lucrează he / she works = *ei / ele lucrează* they work
el / ea copiază he / she copies = *ei / ele copiază* they copy
Andrei întârzie întotdeauna, dar colegii lui nu întârzie niciodată. Andrei is always late, but his colleagues are never late.
- **verbs of 1st conjugation, stem ending in a vowel (without the infix -ez-/-eaz-) – present indicative, 1st pers. sing. = present indicative, 2nd pers. sing.:**
eu întârzii I am late = *tu întârzii* you are late
eu mă apropii I come close = *tu te apropii* you come close
Eu nu întârzii niciodată. I am never late. *Tu de ce întârzii mereu?* Why are you always late?
- **verbs of 1st conjugation – present indicative, 2nd pers. pl. = imperfect indicative, 2nd pers. pl.:**
voi cântați you sing = *voi cântați* you were singing
voi lucrați you work = *voi lucrați* you were working
 — *Când am venit eu voi lucrați.* — You were working when I came. — *Voi lucrați întotdeauna așa de mult?* — Do you always work so hard?
- **verbs of 1st conjugation – imperfect indicative, 2nd pers. sing. = simple perfect indicative, 1st pers. sing.:**
tu cântai you were singing = *eu cântai* I sang
tu lucrai you were working = *eu lucrai* I worked
 — *Când am venit eu tu lucrai.* — You were working when I arrived. — *Da, lucrai bineșor, dar acum e timpul să mă opresc.* — Yes, I worked pretty well, but now it's time for me to stop working.
- **verbs of 2nd, 3rd and 4th conjugations – present indicative, 1st pers. sing. = present indicative, 3rd pers. pl. (exception: verbs of 4th conj. in -i, stem ending in vowel without the infix -esc-/-eșt- and verbs of 4th conj. in -î without the infix -ăsc-/-ășt-):**
eu văd I see = *ei / ele văd* they see
eu pot I can = *ei / ele pot* they can
eu merg I walk = *ei / ele merg* they walk

eu vin I come = *ei / ele vin* they come
eu opresc I stop = *ei opresc* they stop
eu locuiesc I live = *ei / ele locuiesc* they live
eu hotărăsc I decide = *ei / ele hotărăsc* they decide

Eu pot să vin mâine la Universitate, dar colegele mele nu pot să vină. I can come tomorrow to the University, but my classmates cannot come.

- verbs of 4th conjugation, in *-i* with stem ending in vowel (without the infix *-esc-/-eșt-*) and in *-î* (without the infix *-ăsc-/-ășt-*) – present indicative, 3rd pers. sing. = present indicative, 3rd pers. sing. :

el / ea bânuie he / she haunts = *ei / ele bânuie* they haunt
el / ea coboară he / she climbs down = *ei / ele coboară* they climb down

Ea coboară cu liftul, iar ei coboară pe scări. She takes the elevator to come down, and they take the stairs.

- verbs of 4th conjugation, stem ending in vowel (without the infix *-esc-/-eșt-*) – present indicative, 1st pers. sing. = present indicative, 2nd pers. sing.:

eu bântui I haunt = *tu bântui* you haunt

Un strigoi îi zise altui strigoi: "În casa asta bântui eu. Tu de ce bântui tot aici?" A ghost said to another ghost: "I am the one who haunts this house. Why are you haunting the same house?"

- all the verbs – imperfect indicative, 1st pers. sing. = imperfect indicative 1st pers. pl. :

eu cântam I was singing = *noi cântam* we were singing
eu vedeam I was seeing = *noi vedeam* we were seeing
eu mergeam I was walking = *noi mergeam* we were walking
eu veneam I was coming = *noi veneam* we were coming
eu hotăram I was deciding = *noi hotăram* we were deciding

Anul trecut eu mergeam pe jos foarte mult. Last year I used to walk a lot. *Noi toți mergeam mult pe jos anul trecut.* We all used to walk a lot last year.

- all the verbs – present subjunctive, 3rd pers. sing. = present subjunctive, 3rd pers. pl.:

el / ea să cânte he/she sing = *ei / ele să cânte* they sing
el / ea să vadă he/she see = *ei / ele să vadă* they see
el / ea să meargă he/she walk = *ei / ele să meargă* they walk
el / ea să vină he/she come = *ei / ele să vină* they come
el / ea să locuiască he/she live = *ei / ele să locuiască* they live
el / ea să coboare he/she climb down = *ei / ele să coboare* they climb down

Ea vrea să locuiască la Paris, dar soțul ei vrea ca ei să locuiască la Londra. She wants to live in Paris, but her husband wants them to live in London.

4.1.7.2. Verbal homographs

The most frequent verbal homographs are:

- verbs of 1st conjugation without the infix *-ez-/-eaz-* – present indicative, 3rd pers. sing. and pl. (stress on stem vowel) — simple perfect indicative, 3rd pers. sing. (stress on final vowel):

NOTE: If the stem vowel is *-a*, there is no homography, because *-a* stressed changes into *-ă* unstressed: *el / ea, ei / ele îmbracă* – *el / ea îmbracă*.

el / ea, ei / ele cântă he / she sings — *el / ea cântă* he / she sang
el / ea, ei / ele intră he / she comes in — *el / ea intră* he / she came in
el / ea, ei / ele întârzie he/she is late — *el / ea întârzie* he / she came late

El întârzie mereu 10-15 minute, dar de data asta chiar că întârzie nepermis de mult! He always comes 10-25 minutes later, but this time he really came far too late!

- verbs of 3rd conjugation, with stem in *cons.* + *r/l* – present indicative, 1st pers. sing. (stress on stem vowel) — simple perfect indicative, 3rd pers. sing. (stress on final vowel):

eu umplu I pour in — *el / ea umplu* he/she poured in

— *Cine umplu din nou paharele cu vin?* — Who poured out more wine in all the glasses? — *Eu umplu toate paharele tot timpul!* — I'm pouring wine into the glasses all the time!

- verbs of 4th conjugation in *-i* without the infix *-esc-/-eșt-* – present indicative, 2nd pers., sing. (stress on stem vowel) — simple perfect indicative, 3rd pers., sing. (stress on final vowel):

tu fugi you run — *el / ea fugi* he / she ran

tu dormi you sleep — *el / ea dormi* he / she slept

tu ieși you get out — *el / ea ieși* he / she got out

Tu ieși din casă zilnic la ora 7 dimineața. You leave the house at 7 a.m. every day. *Ea numai ce ieși din casă.* She just left the house.

- verbs of 4th conjugation in *-i* without the infix *-esc-/-eșt-* – imperative, 2nd pers., sing. affirmative (stress on stem vowel) — imperative, 2nd pers., sing., negative (stress on final vowel):

fugi! run! — *nu fugi!* don't run!

dormi! sleep! — *nu dormi!* don't sleep!

ieși! get out! — *nu ieși!* don't go out!

4.1.8. Forming the negative of the verbs

The negative of all the verbs is formed with the negation **nu** placed before the verbal form, simple or compound. In those verbal moods that embed in their structure a conjunction (*să* in the subjunctive) or a preposition (*a* in the infinitive), the negation **nu** comes after these elements. If the initial sound of the verbal form is **a** (actual verbal form or auxiliaries) or **o** (auxiliaries), the elision of the vowel **-u** in the negation **nu** is possible, but not required.

The only verbal mood that requires a change in form for the actual verb is the imperative singular, formed with the negation **nu** and the infinitive of the verb.

In the past participle and in the gerund, the negative is formed by derivation, with the negative prefix **ne-**.

Below is the complete negative paradigm of the verb **a cânta** to sing, to play an instrument (in the 1st pers. sing. for all the personal moods and in the 2nd pers. sing. in the imperative) :

INDICATIVE							
pluperfect <i>nu cântasem</i>	simple perfect <i>nu cântai</i>	compound perfect <i>nu am / n-am cântat</i>	imperfect <i>nu cântam</i>	present <i>nu cânt</i>	future 1, 2, 3 <i>nu voi cânta, nu o / n-o să cânt, nu am / n-am să cânt</i>	future perfect <i>nu voi fi cântat</i>	future in the past <i>nu aveam / n-aveam să cânt</i>
SUBJUNCTIVE							
past <i>să nu fi cântat</i>			present <i>să nu cânt</i>				
OPTATIVE-CONDITIONAL							
past <i>nu aş / n-aş fi cântat</i>			present <i>nu aş / n-aş cânta</i>				
PRESUMPTIVE							
past <i>nu oi / n-oi fi cântat</i>			present <i>nu oi / n-oi cânta, nu oi / n-oi fi cântând</i>				
IMPERATIVE							
<i>nu cânta!</i>							
INFINITIVE							
past <i>a nu fi cântat</i>			present <i>a nu cânta</i>				
PARTICIPLE							
past <i>necântat</i>							
GERUND							
<i>necântând</i>							
SUPINE							
<i>de necântat</i>							

4.1.9. The interrogative of the verbs

Romanian verbs do not have a formal expression of the interrogative. The only means that indicates the interrogation is the interrogative intonation:

- *Voi aveți o casă în București.* You have a house in Bucharest.
- *Voi aveți o casă în București?* Do you have a house in Bucharest?

If the interrogative sentence starts with an interrogative pronoun or adverb (*cine* who, *ce* what, *care* which, *cum* how, *cât* how much, *unde* where, *când* when, etc.), the subject comes after the verb:

- *Andrei are o casă în București.* Andrei has a house in Bucharest.

— *Ce are Andrei?* What does Andrei have?

4.2. Personal moods

4.2.1. The indicative

The verbs in the indicative mood indicate an action seen as real, being accomplished in the present, already accomplished in the past or to be accomplished in the future. The tenses of the indicative are: present, compound perfect, imperfect, simple perfect, pluperfect, future 1, future 2, future 3, future perfect and future in the past.

4.2.1.1. The present indicative

The indicative present is formed from the stem of the infinitive plus a series of endings, different for the verbs of different conjugations. Some verbs are irregular in the present indicative. All the verbs in the present indicative form the negative according to the general rule presented in subsection 4.1.8. They combine with clitic personal pronouns as shown in subsections 3.4.1.4. and 3.4.1.7.

4.2.1.1.1. The present indicative of the verbs in *-a* (1st conjugation)

The verbs in *-a* (1st conjugation) take the following endings in the present indicative:

	singular	plural
1 st	<i>-Ø; -u; -i</i>	<i>-ăm; -em</i>
2 nd	<i>-i</i>	<i>-ați</i>
3 rd	<i>-ă; -e</i>	<i>-ă; -e</i>

The endings are attached to the stem of the infinitive. Phonetic changes may occur in the stem.

The forms of the 3rd pers. sing. and 3rd pers. pl. of all regular verbs in *-a* are identical:

<i>el / ea cântă = ei / ele cântă</i>
<i>el / ea intră = ei / ele intră</i>
<i>el / ea întârzie = ei / ele întârzie</i>
<i>el / ea dansează = ei / ele dansează</i>
<i>el / ea lucrează = ei / ele lucrează</i>
<i>el / ea parchează = ei / ele parchează</i>
<i>el / ea copiază = ei / ele copiază</i>

There are two groups of verbs in *-a*: verbs that do not take any infix (model 1), and verbs that take the infix *-ez-/-eaz-* between the stem and the ending (model 2).

4.2.1.1.1.1. Model 1 – without infix

4.2.1.1.1.1.1. Stem of the infinitive ending in a consonant

a cânta to sing/to play an instrument

	singular	plural
1 st	eu cânt	noi cântăm
2 nd	tu cânti	voi cântați
3 rd	el / ea cântă	ei / ele cântă

Other verbs that form the present indicative the same way: **a ajuta** to help, **a alerga** to run, **a arăta** to show, **a asculta** to listen to, **a căuta** to look for, **a chema** to call, **a discuta** to discuss, **a explica** to explain, **a încerca** to try, **a întreba** to ask, **a prepara** to prepare, **a saluta** to greet, **a urca** to climb up, **a zbura** to fly.

4.2.1.1.1.1.2. Stem ending in consonant + r/l

These verbs take the ending **-u** in the 1st pers. sing.

a intra to enter, to get in

	singular	plural
1 st	eu intru	noi intrăm
2 nd	tu intri	voi intrați
3 rd	el / ea intră	ei / ele intră

Other verbs that form the present indicative the same way: **a afla** to find out, **a contempla** to contemplate, **a sufla** to blow, to breathe, **a umbla** to walk around.

4.2.1.1.1.1.3. Stem ending in -i after vowel

These verbs have identical forms for the 1st and the 2nd pers. sing., with ending **Ø**. In the 3rd pers. sing. and pl. these verbs take the ending **-e**, and in the 1st pers. pl. the ending **-em**.

a încuia to lock

	singular	plural
1 st	eu încui	noi încuiem
2 nd	tu încui	voi încuiați
3 rd	el / ea încuie	ei / ele încuie

Other verbs that form the present indicative the same way: **a încheia** to button, **a descheia** to unbutton, **a descuia** to unlock, **a mângâia** to caress.

4.2.1.1.1.4. The verb *a întârzia*

The verb *a întârzia* to be late, to come late has identical forms for the 1st and the 2nd pers. sing., ending in *-i*. In the 3rd pers. sing. and pl. it takes the ending *-e*, and in the 1st pers. pl. the ending *-em*:

	singular	plural
1 st	<i>eu întârzii</i>	<i>noi întârziem</i>
2 nd	<i>tu întârzii</i>	<i>voi întârziați</i>
3 rd	<i>el / ea întârzie</i>	<i>ei / ele întârzie</i>

4.2.1.1.1.5. The verb *a continua*

The verb *a continua* to continue, to go on has identical forms for the 1st and the 2nd pers. sing., ending in *-i*. In the 3rd pers. sing. and pl. it takes the ending *-ă*, and in the 1st pers. pl. the ending *-ăm*:

	singular	plural
1 st	<i>eu continui</i>	<i>noi continuăm</i>
2 nd	<i>tu continui</i>	<i>voi continuați</i>
3 rd	<i>el / ea continuă</i>	<i>ei / ele continuă</i>

4.2.1.1.1.2. Model 2 – with the infix *-ez-/-eaz-*

Many verbs of the 1st conjugation take, before the regular ending, the infix *-ez-/-eaz-* in the 1st, 2nd and 3rd pers. sing. and the 3rd pers. pl.

4.2.1.1.1.2.1. Stem ending in a *consonant*, including *r/l*

a dansa to dance; *a lucra* to work

	singular		plural	
1 st	<i>eu dansez</i>	<i>eu lucrez</i>	<i>noi dansăm</i>	<i>noi lucreăm</i>
2 nd	<i>tu dansezi</i>	<i>tu lucrezi</i>	<i>voi dansați</i>	<i>voi lucreați</i>
3 rd	<i>el / ea dansează</i>	<i>el / ea lucrează</i>	<i>ei / ele dansează</i>	<i>ei / ele lucrează</i>

Other verbs that form the present indicative the same way: *a absenta* to be absent, *a ateriza* to land, *a calcula* to calculate, *a cina* to have dinner, *a completa* to complete, to fill in/out, *a corecta* to correct, *a dicta* to dictate, *a forma* to form, *a decola* to take off (of planes), *a fuma* to smoke, *a nota* to note, to write down, *a telefona* to phone, *a vizita* to visit

4.2.1.1.1.2.2. Stem ending in *c/g*

These verbs preserve the velar and palatal character of the consonants *-c-* and *-g-* before the infix *-ez-/-eaz-*. Thus the usage of the groups *-che-* and *-ghe-* is required in writing in all the persons that take the infix.

a parca to park

	singular	plural
1 st	<i>eu parchez</i>	<i>noi parcheăm</i>
2 nd	<i>tu parchezi</i>	<i>voi parcheați</i>
3 rd	<i>el / ea parchează</i>	<i>ei / ele parchează</i>

Other verbs that form the present indicative the same way: *a bloca* to block, *a dialoga* to have a dialog, *a divaga* to digress, *a interoga* to interrogate, *a marca* to mark, *a stoca* to stock, *a șoca* to shock.

4.2.1.1.2.3. Stem ending in -i

These verbs take the ending *-em* in the 1st pers. pl. In the 3rd pers. sing. and pl. the infix *-eaz-* loses its initial *-e-*.

a copia to copy

	singular	plural
1 st	<i>eu copiez</i>	<i>noi copiem</i>
2 nd	<i>tu copiezi</i>	<i>voi copieți</i>
3 rd	<i>el / ea copiează</i>	<i>ei / ele copiează</i>

Other verbs that form the present indicative the same way: *a aprecia* to appreciate, *a fotografia* to photograph, *a invidia* to envy, *a sublinia* to underline, to point out, *a studia* to study.

4.2.1.1.2. The present indicative of the verbs in -ea (2nd conjugation)

The verbs in *-ea* have the following endings in the present indicative:

	singular	plural
1 st	<i>-Ø</i>	<i>-em</i>
2 nd	<i>-i</i>	<i>-eți</i>
3 rd	<i>-e</i>	<i>-Ø</i>

The endings are attached to the stem of the infinitive. The endings for the 1st and 2nd pers. pl. are always stressed. Phonetic changes may occur in the stem.

The forms of the 1st pers. sing. and 3rd pers. pl. of all regular verbs in *-ea* are identical:

<i>eu văd = ei / ele văd</i>
<i>eu pot = ei / ele pot</i>

The verbs of the 2nd conjugation conjugate in the present indicative like the verb *a vedea* to see :

	singular	plural
1 st	<i>eu văd</i>	<i>noi vedem</i>
2 nd	<i>tu vezi</i>	<i>voi vedeți</i>
3 rd	<i>el / ea vede</i>	<i>ei / ele văd</i>

Other verbs that form the present indicative the same way: *a apărea* to appear, *a cădea* to fall (down), *a dispărea* to disappear, *a părea* to seem, to look, *a prevedea* to foresee, *a putea* to be able, can, may, *a revedea* to see again, *a scădea* to subtract, do diminish, *a tăcea* to be silent, to keep silent.

Some verbs can show complex phonetic mutations, like *a putea*: *eu pot, tu poți, el / ea poate, noi putem, voi puteți, ei / ele pot*

4.2.1.1.3. The present indicative of the verbs in *-e* (3rd conjugation)

The verbs in *-e* have the following endings in the present indicative:

	singular	plural
1 st	-Ø, -u	-em
2 nd	-i	-eți
3 rd	-e	-Ø, -u

The endings are attached to the stem of the infinitive. The verbs in *-e* have the same endings as the verbs in *-ea*, but the endings for the 1st and 2nd pers. pl. are not stressed. The ending *-u* in the 1st pers. sing. and the 3rd pers pl. occur after stems ending in **consonant + r/l**, as well as after stems ending in a vowel. Phonetic changes may occur in the stem.

The forms of the **1st pers. sing.** and **3rd pers. pl.** of all regular verbs in *-e* are identical:

eu cer = ei / ele cer
eu pun = ei / ele pun
eu umplu = ei / ele umplu
eu scriu = ei / ele scriu

4.2.3.1.1.3.1. Stem ending in consonant, other than *-n*

a cere to ask, to demand

	singular	plural
1 st	<i>eu cer</i>	<i>noi cerem</i>
2 nd	<i>tu ceri</i>	<i>voi cereți</i>
3 rd	<i>el / ea cere</i>	<i>ei / ele cer</i>

Other verbs that form the present indicative the same way: *a aduce* to bring, *a ajunge* to arrive, *a alege* to choose, *a crede* to think, to consider, *a cunoaște* to know, *a deschide* to open, *a face* to make, to do, *a începe* to start, to begin, *a închide* to close, *a înțelege* to understand, *a merge* to walk, to go, *a naște* to give birth, *a plânge* to cry, *a râde* to laugh.

4.2.3.1.1.3.2. Stem ending in *-n*

In the 2nd pers. sing. the final *n* of the stem disappears before the ending *-i*.

a pune to put

	singular	plural
1 st	<i>eu pun</i>	<i>noi punem</i>
2 nd	<i>tu pui</i>	<i>voi puneți</i>
3 rd	<i>el / ea pune</i>	<i>ei / ele pun</i>

Other verbs that form the present indicative the same way: *a aparține* to belong, *a conține* to contain, *a depune* to lay, to put down, to deposit money, *a expune* to expose, *a menține* to keep, to maintain, *a presupune* to suppose, to presume, *a rămâne* to stay, *a ține* to keep, to hold.

4.2.3.1.1.3.3. Stem ending in consonant + r/l

The 1st pers. sing. and the 3rd pers. pl. take the ending **-u**.

a umple to fill up

	singular	plural
1 st	eu umplu	noi umplem
2 nd	tu umpli	voi umpleți
3 rd	el / ea umple	ei / ele umplu

4.2.3.1.1.3.4. Stem ending in a vowel

The 1st pers. sing. and the 3rd pers. pl. take the ending **-u**. The 2nd pers. sing. ends in double **-i** (the first one belongs to the stem, the other one represents the ending).

a scrie to write

	singular	plural
1 st	eu scriu	noi scriem
2 nd	tu scrii	voi scrieți
3 rd	el / ea scrie	ei / ele scriu

Other verbs that form the present indicative the same way: **a descrie** to describe, **a înscrie** to check in, to enroll, **a rescrie** to rewrite, **a transcrie** to write again, to copy.

4.2.1.1.4. The present indicative of the verbs in -i (4th conjugation)

The verbs in **-i** have the following endings in the present indicative:

	singular	plural
1 st	-Ø, -i	-im
2 nd	-i	-iți
3 rd	-e	-Ø, -e

The endings are attached to the stem of the infinitive. Phonetic mutations may occur in the stem.

The forms of the **1st pers. sing.** and **3rd pers. pl.** of the verbs in **-i** after consonant are identical:

eu fug = ei / ele fug
eu dorm = ei / ele dorm
eu vin = ei / ele vin
eu glumesc = ei / ele glumesc
eu construiesc = ei / ele construiesc

The forms of the **3rd pers. sing.** and **3rd pers. pl.** of the verbs in **-i** after vowel are identical:

el / ea contribuie = ei / ele contribuie

There are two groups of verbs in *-i*: verbs that do not take any infix (model 1) and verbs that take the infix *-esc-/-eșt-* between the stem and the ending (model 2).

4.2.1.1.4.1. Model 1 – without infix

4.2.1.1.4.1.1. Stem of the infinitive ending in a consonant, other than *-n*

a dormi to sleep

	singular	plural
1 st	<i>eu dorm</i>	<i>noi dormim</i>
2 nd	<i>tu dormi</i>	<i>voi dormiți</i>
3 rd	<i>el / ea doarme</i>	<i>ei / ele dorm</i>

Other verbs that form the present indicative the same way: *a adormi* to fall asleep, *a auzi* to hear, *a fugi* to run, *a ieși* to get out, *a minți* to lie, to tell lies, *a sări* to jump.

NOTE: The verbs *a oferi* and *a suferi* have some particularities:

a oferi to offer: *eu ofer*, *tu oferi*, *el / ea oferă*, *noi oferim*, *voi oferiți*, *ei / ele oferă*

a suferi to suffer: *eu sufăr*, *tu suferi*, *el / ea suferă*, *noi suferim*, *voi suferiți*, *ei / ele suferă*

4.2.1.1.4.1.2. Stem ending in *-n*

The final *-n* of the stem disappears in the 2nd pers. sing. before the ending *-i*.

a veni to come

	singular	plural
1 st	<i>eu vin</i>	<i>noi venim</i>
2 nd	<i>tu vii</i>	<i>voi veniți</i>
3 rd	<i>el / ea vine</i>	<i>ei / ele vin</i>

Other verbs that form the present indicative the same way: *a deveni* to become, *a reveni* to come back, to come again, *a surveni* to happen.

4.2.1.1.4.1.3. Stem ending in a vowel, mostly *-u*

The 1st and 2nd pers. sing. are identical, with the ending *-i*. The 3rd pers. sing. and the 3rd pers. pl. are identical, with the ending *-e*.

a contribui to contribute

	singular	plural
1 st	<i>eu contribui</i>	<i>noi contribuim</i>
2 nd	<i>tu contribui</i>	<i>voi contribuiți</i>
3 rd	<i>el / ea contribuie</i>	<i>ei / ele contribuie</i>

Other verbs that form the present indicative the same way: *a bântui* to haunt, *a birui* to win, to defeat, *a chinui* to torment, to torture, *a chiui* to squeal, *a piui* to cheep, to peep (of birds).

4.2.1.1.4.2. Model 2 – with the infix *-esc-/-eșt-*

Many verbs of the 4th conjugation in *-i* take, before the regular ending, the infix *-esc-/-eșt-* in the 1st, 2nd and 3rd pers.sing. and the 3rd pers. pl.

4.2.1.1.4.2.1. Stem ending in a *consonant*

a glumi to joke, to kid

	singular	plural
1 st	<i>eu glumesc</i>	<i>noi glumim</i>
2 nd	<i>tu glumești</i>	<i>voi glumiți</i>
3 rd	<i>el / ea glumește</i>	<i>ei / ele glumesc</i>

Other verbs that form the present indicative the same way: *a aminti* to remind, *a călători* to travel, *a citi* to read, *a dori* to wish, *a găsi* to find, *a gândi* to think, *a greși* to make a mistake, *a iubi* to love, *a mulțumi* to thank, *a obosi* to get tired, *a primi* to receive, to get, *a privi* to look, *a răci* to catch a cold, *a sosi* to arrive, *a vorbi* to speak, to talk.

4.2.1.1.4.2.2 Stem ending in a *vowel*, mostly *-u*

An *-i-* appears before the infix.

a construi to build

	singular	plural
1 st	<i>eu construiesc</i>	<i>noi construim</i>
2 nd	<i>tu construiești</i>	<i>voi construiți</i>
3 rd	<i>el/ea construiește</i>	<i>ei/ele construiesc</i>

Other verbs that form the present indicative the same way: *a bănuî* to suspect, *a dăruî* to give, to make gifts, *a disprețui* to despise, *a cheltui* to spend money, *a locui* to live in, *a sfătui* to advise, *a trăi* to live, to be alive.

4.2.1.1.5. The present indicative of the verbs in *-î* (4th conjugation)

The verbs in *-î* have the following endings in the present indicative:

	singular	plural
1 st	<i>-Ø</i>	<i>-âm</i>
2 nd	<i>-i</i>	<i>-âți</i>
3 rd	<i>-ă; -e</i>	<i>-Ø; -ă</i>

The endings are attached to the stem of the infinitive. Phonetic mutations may occur in the stem.

There are two groups of verbs in *-î*: verbs that do not take any infix (model 1) and verbs that take the infix *-ăsc-/-ășt-* between the stem and the ending (model 2).

Unlike the verbs in *-i*, the verbs in *-î* have different series of endings, depending on the presence of the infix *-ăsc-/-ășt-*. The differences appear in the 3rd pers. sing. and pl.

The verbs that do not take the infix *-ăsc-/-ășt-* have identical forms for the 3rd pers. sing. and 3rd pers. pl.:

<i>el / ea coboară = ei / ele coboară</i> <i>el / ea omoară = ei / ele omoară</i>
--

The verbs that take the infix **-ăsc-/-ăşt-** have identical forms for the **1st pers. sing.** and **3rd pers. pl.**:

<i>eu hotărăsc = ei / ele hotărăsc</i> <i>eu pâărăsc = ei / ele pâărăsc</i>
--

4.2.1.1.5.1. Model 1 – without infix

a coborî to descend, to climb down

	singular	plural
1 st	<i>eu cobor</i>	<i>noi coborâm</i>
2 nd	<i>tu coborî</i>	<i>voi coborâţi</i>
3 rd	<i>el / ea coboară</i>	<i>ei / ele coboară</i>

Other verbs that form the present indicative the same way: **a doborî** to throw down, **a omorî** to kill.

4.2.1.1.5.2. Model 2 – with the infix -ăsc-/-ăşt-

Many verbs of the 4th conjugation in **-î** take, before the regular ending, the infix **-ăsc-/-ăşt-** in the 1st, 2nd and 3rd pers. sing. and the 3rd pers. pl.

a hotărî to decide

	singular	plural
1 st	<i>eu hotărăsc</i>	<i>noi hotărâm</i>
2 nd	<i>tu hotărăşti</i>	<i>voi hotărâţi</i>
3 rd	<i>el / ea hotărăşte</i>	<i>ei / ele hotărăsc</i>

Other verbs that form the present indicative the same way: **a amărî** to upset, **a pâri** to denounce, to tell on, **a târi** to drag.

4.2.1.1.6. The present indicative of the irregular verbs

The irregular verbs form the present indicative as follows :

<i>a fi</i> to be	<i>a avea</i> to have
<i>eu sunt / -s</i>	<i>eu am</i>
<i>tu ești</i>	<i>tu ai</i>
<i>el / ea este / e / -i</i>	<i>el / ea are</i>
<i>noi suntem</i>	<i>noi avem</i>
<i>voi sunteți</i>	<i>voi aveți</i>
<i>ei / ele sunt / -s</i>	<i>ei / ele au</i>

<i>a da</i> to give	<i>a sta</i> to stay, to stand, to sit	<i>a lua</i> to take	<i>a mânca</i> to eat	<i>a bea</i> to drink	<i>a vrea</i> to want	<i>a ști</i> to know
<i>eu dau</i>	<i>eu stau</i>	<i>eu iau</i>	<i>eu mănânc</i>	<i>eu beau</i>	<i>eu vreau</i>	<i>eu știu</i>
<i>tu dai</i>	<i>tu stai</i>	<i>tu ieși</i>	<i>tu mănânci</i>	<i>tu bei</i>	<i>tu vrei</i>	<i>tu știi</i>
<i>el / ea dă</i>	<i>el / ea stă</i>	<i>el / ea ia</i>	<i>el / ea mănâncă</i>	<i>el / ea bea</i>	<i>el / ea vrea</i>	<i>el / ea știe</i>
<i>noi dăm</i>	<i>noi stăm</i>	<i>noi luăm</i>	<i>noi mâncăm</i>	<i>noi bem</i>	<i>noi vrem</i>	<i>noi știm</i>
<i>voi dați</i>	<i>voi stați</i>	<i>voi luați</i>	<i>voi mâncați</i>	<i>voi beți</i>	<i>voi vreți</i>	<i>voi știți</i>
<i>ei / ele dau</i>	<i>ei / ele stau</i>	<i>ei / ele iau</i>	<i>ei / ele mănâncă</i>	<i>ei / ele beau</i>	<i>ei / ele vor</i>	<i>ei / ele știu</i>

4.2.1.1.7. Usage of the present indicative

The present tense of the indicative mood is used to indicate:

- an established or well-known truth, an action that is typical to a subject:
Pământul este rotund. The Earth is round.
Păsările zboară. Birds fly.
- a constant, long-term or habitual action or state:
Ea lucrează la Universitate. She works at the university.
- a repetitive action:
Autobuzele circulă zilnic între Durham și Chapel Hill. Buses run between Durham and Chapel Hill on a daily basis.
- an action in progress at the moment of speaking:
— *Ce faci?* What are you doing?
— *Citești, nu vezi?* I'm reading, don't you see?
- an action or state that started in the past and is still in progress at the moment of speech:
Lucrez aici din 1994. I have been working here since 1994.
- an action that took place in the past but is rendered more vivid by a present tense (the so-called "historic present"):
La 4 iulie 1776 America își declară independența. On July 4th 1776 America declares its independence.
- a future action, if the action is certain or a question about a future action:
— *Unde mergem mâine?* Where are we going tomorrow?
— *Mâine mergem să vedem un film.* Tomorrow we are going to see a movie.

The present indicative can have the value of the imperative:

Acuma te duci acasă și te odihnești, iar la ora 4 vii înapoi și continuăm să lucrăm. Now you go home and have some rest, and you'll come back at 4 o'clock and we'll continue our work.

Since Romanian has no continuous or progressive forms, the present indicative corresponds both to the present indefinite and to the present continuous in English:

Eu predau italiană, dar acum predau și spaniolă. I teach Italian, but now I am teaching Spanish, too.

When indicating an action or state that started in the past and is still in progress in the present, the Romanian present indicative corresponds to the English present perfect or present perfect continuous:

O cunosc pe studenta aceasta din 1999. I have known this student since 1999.

Locuiesc în Statele Unite de trei ani. I've been living in the United States for three years.

4.2.1.2. The compound perfect indicative

4.2.1.2.1. Forming the compound perfect indicative

The compound perfect is formed with the auxiliaries *am, ai, a, am, ați, au* and the past participle of the actual verb:

<i>a cânta</i> to sing	<i>a lucra</i> to work	<i>a vedea</i> to see	<i>a cere</i> to ask	<i>a veni</i> to come	<i>a urî</i> to hate
<i>eu am cântat</i>	<i>eu am lucrat</i>	<i>eu am văzut</i>	<i>eu am cerut</i>	<i>eu am venit</i>	<i>eu am urât</i>
<i>tu ai cântat</i>	<i>tu ai lucrat</i>	<i>tu ai văzut</i>	<i>tu ai cerut</i>	<i>tu ai venit</i>	<i>tu ai urât</i>
<i>el / ea a cântat</i>	<i>el / ea a lucrat</i>	<i>el / ea a văzut</i>	<i>el / ea a cerut</i>	<i>el / ea a venit</i>	<i>el / ea a urât</i>
<i>noi am cântat</i>	<i>noi am lucrat</i>	<i>noi am văzut</i>	<i>noi am cerut</i>	<i>noi am venit</i>	<i>noi am urât</i>
<i>voi ați cântat</i>	<i>voi ați lucrat</i>	<i>voi ați văzut</i>	<i>voi ați cerut</i>	<i>voi ați venit</i>	<i>voi ați urât</i>
<i>ei / ele au cântat</i>	<i>ei / ele au lucrat</i>	<i>ei / ele au văzut</i>	<i>ei / ele au cerut</i>	<i>ei / ele au venit</i>	<i>ei / ele au urât</i>

All the verbs in the present indicative form the negative according to the general rule presented in subsection 4.1.8. They combine with clitic personal pronouns as shown in subsections 3.4.1.4. and 3.4.1.7.

The insertion of a modal adverb such as *mai, și, cam, tot, mai și* between the auxiliary and the past participle of the verb is possible in the compound perfect:

Am stat de vorbă mult, dar am și lucrat. We talked a lot, but we worked, too.

Ai cam întârziat. You are a little bit late.

Te-ai mai îngrășat de când ne-am văzut ultima dată. You've gained some weight since we last met.

Am fost stresată și am tot mâncat. I've been under pressure, so I kept eating.

4.2.1.2.2. Usage of the compound perfect indicative

The compound perfect indicative is used to show a past action considered completed at the moment of speaking. This is the tense used most frequently to express a completed past action. In general, it corresponds to the English past tense indefinite but, since Romanian has no present perfect and does not formally express the opposition between simple and continuous, the Romanian compound perfect can also correspond to the English present perfect or present perfect continuous:

Numai ce-am văzut-o pe Andreea! I have just seen Andreea!

Nu am văzut-o pe Andreea de doi ani. I haven't seen Andreea for two years.

Am lucrat mult săptămâna asta. I have been working a lot this week.

4.2.1.3. The imperfect indicative

4.2.1.3.1. Forming the imperfect indicative

The imperfect is formed from the stem of the infinitive with the stressed suffix **-a-** or **-ea-/-ia-** and the endings : **-m, -i, -Ø, -m, -ți, -u** for all the verbs:

		suffix -a-		suffix -ea-		suffix -ia-	
		vbs. in -a	vbs. in -î	vbs. in -ea	vbs. in -e	vbs. in -i	vbs. in -i , stem in a vowel
sing	1 st	lucram	coboram	vedeam	ceream	povesteam	locuiam
	2 nd	lucrai	coborai	vedeai	cereai	povesteai	locuiai
	3 rd	lucra	cobora	vedea	cerea	povestea	locuia
pl	1 st	lucram	coboram	vedeam	ceream	povesteam	locuiam
	2 nd	lucrați	coborați	vedeați	cereaiți	povesteaiți	locuiați
	3 rd	lucrau	coborau	vedeau	cereau	povesteau	locuiau

- the verbs in **-a** (1st conj.) and **-î** (4th conj.) take the suffix **-a-**
- the verbs in **-ea** (2nd conj.), in **-e** (3rd conj.) and in **-i** (4th conj.) take the suffix **-ea-**
- the verbs in **-i** (4th conj.) with the stem ending in a vowel (**a locui** to live in / at, **a bănu** to suspect, **a cotrobă** to look through / under) take the suffix **-ia-**, instead of **-ea-**: **a locui** – **locuiam**, **locuiai**, **locuia**, **locuiam**, **locuiați**, **locuiau**
- the verb **a ști** to know and the verb **a scrie** to write and its derivatives take the suffix **-a**: **eu ști**am, **tu ști**ai, **el ști**a, **noi ști**am, **voi ști**ați, **ei ști**au ; **eu scri**am, **tu scri**ai, **el scri**a, **noi scri**am, **voi scri**ați, **ei scri**au ; the group **-ia-** in these verbs is not a diphthong, but a hiatus
- the forms of the 1st person in the singular and in the plural are identical : **eu lucram** = **noi lucram**, **eu povesteam** = **noi povesteam**

The imperfect negative is formed according to the general rule: **nu lucram**, **nu ajutam** / **n-ajutam** ; **nu înțelegeam** / **nu-nțelegeam**.

Since the imperfect is a simple tense, the combination with different unstressed pronouns (reflexive or personal) follows the general rules. When the verb is in the negative, the negation comes before the pronouns. Adverbs like **mai**, **și**, **tot**, **prea** can be used with the verbs in the imperfect. If the verb is in the negative, all the inserted elements (pronouns, adverbs) will be placed between the negation **nu** and the actual verb : **eu mă grăbeam** I was in a hurry, **tu mi le arătai** you were showing them to me, **el ne-o prezenta** he was introducing her to us, **eu nu mă grăbeam** I was not in a hurry, **tu nu mi-o împrumutai** you were not lending it to me, **tu tot lucrai** you were still working, **noi nu mai vedeam nimic** we couldn't see anything anymore, etc.

Some verbs have irregular forms in the imperfect :

		a fi to be	a avea to have	a da to give	a voi to want (preferred instead of a vrea)	a sta to stay
sing	1 st	eram	aveam	dădeam	voiam	stăteam
	2 nd	erai	aveai	dădeai	voiai	stăteai
	3 rd	era	avea	dădea	voia	stătea
pl	1 st	eram	aveam	dădeam	voiam	stăteam
	2 nd	erați	aveați	dădeaiți	voiați	stăteați
	3 rd	erau	aveau	dădeau	voiau	stăteau

4.2.1.3.2. Usage of the imperfect indicative

The imperfect is generally used to indicate an action or a state in the past which is perceived as progressive (thus the imperfect is the tense of story-telling), continuing, repeated or habitual:

Ana stătea ore în șir pe malul mării: privea pescărușii. Ana was spending hours on the beach: she was watching the seagulls. (actions in progress in the past)

Anul trecut mă trezeam la ora șase și lucram până la 12.00. Last year I used to wake up at 6 a.m. and I was working till noon. (habitual, repeated actions)

When two past actions are to be expressed in a sentence, the imperfect renders either a continuous background action in contrast with a momentary action, or a subsequent action:

— **Tu ce făceai când te-am sunat?** — **Citeam.** — What were you doing when I called you? — I was reading. (simultaneous actions, the imperfect in development, the compound perfect punctual)

Când treceam pe la ea, era mereu ocupată. Whenever I stopped by her place, she was always busy. (simultaneous actions, the first imperfect showing a repeated action in the past, the second imperfect showing a continuing background action in the past)

Am prins trenul care pleca peste 5 minute. I caught the train that was leaving in 5 minutes. (subsequent action)

The imperfect indicative is usually rendered in English by a past perfect continuous, as well as by the construction 'used to' or the frequentative 'would'.

The imperfect indicative can also have values that are typical for other moods or tenses. The most frequent and common conversion is the imperfect used as a past conditional (see subsection 4.2.4.2.2.):

Dacă luai rochia ieri, nu mai era nevoie să ne ducem la magazin și astăzi! If you had bought the dress yesterday, we wouldn't have had to go to the store again today!

In elliptical constructions with the conjunctions *dacă* / *de* if, the imperfect can show an unfulfilled wish, a regret (the same equivalence with the past conditional, see subsection 4.2.4.2.2.):

Dacă știam! Had I known!

De rămâneai...! If you had stayed ...!

Dacă aveam bani... If I had had money...

The imperfect can be used instead of the present indicative to make a request sound softer or more polite:

— **Cu ce vă pot fi de folos?** — **Voiam doar să vă cer un sfat!** — How can I help you? — I just wanted a piece of advice!

The imperfect of the verbs *a ști* to know, *a crede* to think, to believe, *a considera* to believe, *a bănui* to suspect, to believe is used to indicate a permanent state of awareness or a presupposition (both in the past and in the present):

— **Credeam că ați plecat deja. Ce bine că sunteți încă aici!** I thought you had left. It's so good that you are still here!

Știam că nu eram pregătită pentru așa un examen. Și a fost un eșec. I knew I was not ready for such an exam. And it was a failure.

The imperfect is used in children's speech, where it has the value of a fictional present or future, and is also used to assign the roles in the game:

Eu eram tatăl și tu erai mama. I will be the father and you will be the mother.

The imperfect is also the tense used in the Romanian equivalent of the question 'Did you know that ...?': **Știați că ...?**

4.2.1.4. The simple perfect indicative

4.2.1.4.1. Forming the simple perfect indicative

The forms of the simple perfect are made of the stem of the infinitive (unstressed, which leads to phonetic changes), a stressed suffix, that is different in each group of verbs, and the endings *-i*, *-și*, *-Ø*, *-răm*, *-răți*, *-ră*, which are the same for all the verbs:

		vbs. in <i>-a</i>	vbs. in <i>-ea</i>	vbs. in <i>-e</i>		vbs. in <i>-i</i>	vbs. in <i>-î</i>
		suffix <i>-a-</i>	suffix <i>-u-</i>		suffix <i>-se-</i>	suffix <i>-i-</i>	suffix <i>-â/î-</i>
sg.	1 st	<i>intrai</i>	<i>tăcui</i>	<i>cerui</i>	<i>rămăsei</i>	<i>dormi</i>	<i>coborâ<i>i</i></i>
	2 nd	<i>intrași</i>	<i>tăcuși</i>	<i>ceruși</i>	<i>rămăseși</i>	<i>dormi<i>și</i></i>	<i>coborâ<i>și</i></i>
	3 rd	<i>intraă</i>	<i>tăcuă</i>	<i>ceruă</i>	<i>rămaseă</i>	<i>dormi</i>	<i>coborî</i>
pl.	1 st	<i>intrarăm</i>	<i>tăcurăm</i>	<i>cerurăm</i>	<i>rămăserăm</i>	<i>dormi<i>răm</i></i>	<i>coborâ<i>răm</i></i>
	2 nd	<i>intrarăți</i>	<i>tăcurăți</i>	<i>cerurăți</i>	<i>rămăserăți</i>	<i>dormi<i>răți</i></i>	<i>coborâ<i>răți</i></i>
	3 rd	<i>intrară</i>	<i>tăcură</i>	<i>cerură</i>	<i>rămaseră</i>	<i>dormi<i>ră</i></i>	<i>coborâ<i>ră</i></i>

- verbs in *-a* (1st conjugation) take the suffix *-a-* (that turns into *-ă* in the 3rd person singular). The verbs in *-a* with the stem ending in a vowel (except *-u*) take the suffix *-e* in the 3rd person singular: *a se apropia – se apropie*, *a copia – copie*
- verbs in *-ea* (2nd conjugation) take the suffix *-u-*
- verbs in *-i* (4th conjugation) take the suffix *-i-*
- verbs in *-î* (4th conjugation) take the suffix *-â(-î-)*
- verbs in *-e* (3rd conjugation) form the simple perfect with the suffix *-u-* (the verbs that form the past participle in *-ut*) or with the suffix *-se-* (the verbs that form the past participle in *-s*). Before the suffix *-se-* the final consonant of the stem may disappear (*a prinde – prinse**i***, *prinse**și***, *prinse**ă***, etc.) or change into a different consonant (*a frige – fripe**sei***, *fripe**și***, *fripe**ă***, etc.); in the 3rd pers. sing. and pl. se suffix *-se-* is not stressed.

The simple perfect of the verbs *a fi* to be and *a avea* to have is:

<i>a fi</i>	<i>a avea</i>
<i>fui / fusei</i>	<i>avui / avusei</i>
<i>fuși / fuseși</i>	<i>avuși / avuseși</i>
<i>fu / fuse</i>	<i>avu / avuse</i>
<i>furăm / fuserăm</i>	<i>avurăm / avuserăm</i>
<i>furăți / fuserăți</i>	<i>avurăți / avuserăți</i>
<i>fură / fuseră</i>	<i>avură / avuseră</i>

The simple perfect of other irregular verbs is:

<i>a da</i> to give	<i>a lua</i> to take	<i>a sta</i> to stay	<i>a bea</i> to drink	<i>a vrea</i> to want	<i>a ști</i> to know
<i>dădui</i>	<i>luai</i>	<i>stătui</i>	<i>băui</i>	<i>vrui</i>	<i>știui</i>
<i>dăduși</i>	<i>luași</i>	<i>stătuși</i>	<i>băuși</i>	<i>vruși</i>	<i>știuși</i>
<i>dădu</i>	<i>luă</i>	<i>stătu</i>	<i>bău</i>	<i>vru</i>	<i>știu</i>
<i>dădurăm</i>	<i>luarăm</i>	<i>stăturăm</i>	<i>băurăm</i>	<i>vrurăm</i>	<i>știurăm</i>
<i>dădurăți</i>	<i>luarăți</i>	<i>stăturăți</i>	<i>băurăți</i>	<i>vrurăți</i>	<i>știurăți</i>
<i>dădură</i>	<i>luară</i>	<i>stătură</i>	<i>băură</i>	<i>vrură</i>	<i>știură</i>

In the negative, the negation *nu* is placed before the verbal form, according to the general rule: *nu văzui, nu plecași*, etc. If the initial vowel of the verb is *a-* or *î-*, elision is possible, but not required: *nu apăru / n-apăru, nu înțelesei / nu-nțelesei*.

The 3rd person singular of the simple perfect and the 3rd person singular and plural of the present indicative (without infix) of the verbs in *-a* (1st conjugation) are homographs (*cântă* simple perf. – *cântă* pres.):

Ea tocmai cântă un cântec rusesc. She just sang a Russian song.

Ea (el, ei, ele) cântă minunat. She (he, they) sings (sing) very well.

The 3rd person singular of the simple perfect of the verbs in *-i* (4th conjugation) and the 2nd person singular of the present indicative (without infix) are homographs (*fugi* simple perf. – *fugi* pres.):

El fugi cât putu de repede. He ran away as fast as he could.

Tu fugi foarte repede. You run very fast.

The 1st person singular of the simple perfect and the 2nd person singular of the imperfect of the verbs and in *-a* (1st conjugation) with the stem ending in a vowel are homonyms:

Eu tocmai intrai pe ușă. I just came in.

Tu intrai de obicei pe ușa din față. You were usually coming in by the front door.

4.2.1.4.2. Usage of the simple perfect indicative

Simple perfect indicates a past accomplished action. This tense is not frequent in standard speech. The general tendency is to use the compound perfect to express a past action that is perceived as completed at the moment of speaking. Simple perfect is still actively used in current speech in the south-western part of Romania, especially in Oltenia, but also in Banat and in western Muntenia, mostly in rural areas.

When used in everyday speech in standard Romanian, the simple perfect indicates an action completed recently. It is used mostly to create a comic effect or to suggest surprise:

Tocmai îl văzui pe George, băiatul care vinde pâine, la televizor! I've just seen George, the boy who sells bread, on TV!

The 2nd person is often used in questions about finishing an action in progress which is supposed to be over. Using the simple perfect instead of compound perfect makes the question milder and more familiar:

— *Ei, cum e, scriseși?* — Well, have you finished (writing)?

— *Gata, citirăți?* — Are you done, have you read (the texts)?

Simple perfect is very frequent in written narrative discourse. The simple perfect of the speech verbs (*a zice* to say, *a spune* to say, *a țipa* to shout, *a răcni* to yell, *a răspunde* to answer, *a preciza* to specify, etc.) is generally used after a dialogue line in narration, and the word order is **verb + subject**:

— *Aici avem o crimă!, zise polițistul.* — This is murder! the policeman said.

Simple perfect is also used by the narrator's voice just to indicate past actions in a narrative text, which makes the text more vivid. Accordingly, the most frequent forms of this tense are the 3rd person singular and plural and the 1st person singular:

"— *Phii! Fir-ar să fie! Cred că a început meciul...* Oh! Damn! I think the game is on!

Deschise televizorul și se întoarseră cu toții spre noul personaj. He turned on the TV, and all of them turned their heads towards the newcomer. *Până să apară imaginea pe micul ecran, directorul mai spuse* Before the image shown up on the screen, the principal said:

— *Dacă vă interesează, puteți rămâne, nu mă deranjați cu nimic* If you're interested in the game you can stay, it wouldn't bother me at all.

Ei însă se ridicară aproape simultan și, înainte de a ieși, Ciobanu Lenuța stâlci țigara în scrumieră But they stood up almost at the same time and, before leaving the room, Ciobanu Lenuța crushed her cigarette in the ashtray." (P. Cimpoescu – *Simion liftinicul*, Compania, București, 2001)

4.2.1.5. The pluperfect indicative

4.2.1.5.1. Forming the pluperfect indicative

The pluperfect indicative is formed with the suffix *-se-* attached to another suffix, different for each group of verbs, plus the endings: *-m*, *-și*, *-Ø*, *-răm*, *-răți*, *-ră*, which are the same for all the verbs:

		verbs in <i>-a</i>	verbs in <i>-i</i>	verbs in <i>-î</i>
		suffix <i>-a-</i> + <i>-se-</i>	suffix <i>-i-</i> + <i>-se-</i>	suffix <i>-â-</i> + <i>-se-</i>
singular	1 st	<i>lucrasem</i>	<i>citisem</i>	<i>hotărâsem</i>
	2 nd	<i>lucraseși</i>	<i>citiseși</i>	<i>hotărâseși</i>
	3 rd	<i>lucrase</i>	<i>citise</i>	<i>hotărâse</i>
plural	1 st	<i>lucraserăm</i>	<i>citiserăm</i>	<i>hotărâserăm</i>
	2 nd	<i>lucraserăți</i>	<i>citiserăți</i>	<i>hotărâserăți</i>
	3 rd	<i>lucraseră</i>	<i>citiseră</i>	<i>hotărâseră</i>

		verbs in <i>-ea</i>	verbs in <i>-e</i>	
		suffix <i>-u-</i> + <i>-se-</i>	suffix <i>-u-</i> + <i>-se-</i>	suffix <i>-se-</i> + <i>-se-</i>
singular	1 st	<i>tăcusem</i>	<i>cerusem</i>	<i>mersesem</i>
	2 nd	<i>tăcuseși</i>	<i>ceruseși</i>	<i>merseseși</i>
	3 rd	<i>tăcuse</i>	<i>ceruse</i>	<i>mersese</i>
plural	1 st	<i>tăcuserăm</i>	<i>ceruserăm</i>	<i>merseserăm</i>
	2 nd	<i>tăcuserăți</i>	<i>ceruserăți</i>	<i>merseserăți</i>
	3 rd	<i>tăcuseră</i>	<i>ceruseră</i>	<i>merseseră</i>

- the verbs in *-a* (1st conjugation) take the suffix *-a-* before the suffix *-se-*
- the verbs in *-ea* (2nd conjugation) take the suffix *-u-* before the suffix *-se-*
- the verbs in *-i* (4th conjugation) take the suffix *-i-* before the suffix *-se-*
- the verbs in *-î* (4th conjugation) take the suffix *-â-* before the suffix *-se-*
- the verbs in *-e* (3rd conjugation) take the suffix *-u-* (the verbs that form the past participle in *-ut*) or the suffix *-se-* (the verbs that form the past participle in *-s*) before the suffix *-se-*

The pluperfect of the verbs *a fi* and *a avea* is:

<i>a fi</i> to be	<i>a avea</i> to have
<i>eu fusesem</i>	<i>eu avusesem</i>
<i>tu fuseseseși</i>	<i>tu avuseseseși</i>
<i>el / ea fusesese</i>	<i>el / ea avusesese</i>
<i>noi fuseserăm</i>	<i>noi avuseserăm</i>
<i>voi fuseserăți</i>	<i>voi avuseserăți</i>
<i>ei / ele fuseseră</i>	<i>ei / ele avuseseră</i>

The pluperfect of other irregular verbs is:

<i>a da</i> to give	<i>a lua</i> to take	<i>a sta</i> to stay	<i>a bea</i> to drink	<i>a vrea</i> to want	<i>a ști</i> to want
<i>dădusem</i>	<i>luasem</i>	<i>stătusem</i>	<i>băusem</i>	<i>vrusesem</i>	<i>știusem</i>
<i>dăduseși</i>	<i>luaseși</i>	<i>stătuseși</i>	<i>băuseși</i>	<i>vruseseseși</i>	<i>știuseși</i>
<i>dăduse</i>	<i>luase</i>	<i>stătuse</i>	<i>băuse</i>	<i>vrusesese</i>	<i>știuse</i>
<i>dăduserăm</i>	<i>luaserăm</i>	<i>stătuserăm</i>	<i>băuserăm</i>	<i>vruseserăm</i>	<i>știuserăm</i>
<i>dăduserăți</i>	<i>luaserăți</i>	<i>stătuserăți</i>	<i>băuserăți</i>	<i>vruseserăți</i>	<i>știuserăți</i>
<i>dăduseră</i>	<i>luaseră</i>	<i>stătuseră</i>	<i>băuseră</i>	<i>vruseseră</i>	<i>știuseră</i>

The negative is formed according to the general rule, with the negation *nu* placed in front of the verb; if the initial vowel of the verb are *a-* or *î-*, elision is possible but not required: *nu avusesem* / *n-avusesem*, *nu începusem* / *n-ncepusem*. The insertion of pronouns and adverbs follows the general rules for simple tenses.

4.2.1.5.2. Usage of the pluperfect indicative

The pluperfect indicative is a tense of relation, used to indicate a past action that is completed before another past action. Thus, the verb in the pluperfect usually functions in tandem with another verb:

Când a venit mama acasă și mi-a spus să mă duc la alimentara, eu cumpărasem deja tot ce ne trebuia pentru cină. When mother came home and told me to go to buy groceries, I had already bought all we needed for dinner.

However, the presence of the second verb is not required in the text, the second action can be a presupposition or an action priorly suggested in the context. The verb in the pluperfect indicative can also indicate a punctual action that creates the background for other actions that come after the first one:

Aflasem deja totul despre evenimentele recente din firmă. Prin urmare, eram pregătit să înfrunt realitatea. I had already found out everything about the recent events in the firm. So, I was ready to face reality.

Given the particular grammatical value of the verbs in the pluperfect, they are often accompanied by such adverbs or adverbial phrases as: *până atunci* until then, *înainte de* before, *înainte să* before, *înainte ca să* before, *deja* already, *niciodată* never.

4.2.1.6. The future indicative

There are three future tenses in the indicative, different in form but with identical grammatical value in Romanian. Future 1 is formed with an auxiliary and the infinitive of the actual verb. Future 2 and future 3 are based on the forms of the subjunctive present of the actual verb.

4.2.1.6.1. Forming the futures of the indicative

4.2.1.6.1.1. Forming the future 1 indicative

Future 1 is formed with the auxiliaries *voi, vei, va, vom, veți, vor* and the short infinitive of the actual verb. All the Romanian verbs form the future 1 the same way:

singular	1 st	<i>eu voi</i>	+ the infinitive of the actual verb
	2 nd	<i>tu vei</i>	
	3 rd	<i>el / ea va</i>	
plural	1 st	<i>noi vom</i>	
	2 nd	<i>voi veți</i>	
	3 rd	<i>ei / ele vor</i>	

- the infinitive is not preceded by the particle *a* when being a part of the future 1

The negative is formed according to the general rule: the negation *nu* precedes the whole structure **auxiliary + infinitive**: *nu voi fi* I shall not be, *nu veți avea* you will not have, *nu vom cânta* I shall not sing, *nu vor lucra* they will not work, etc. The clitic pronouns precede the whole verbal structure : *eu îl voi cânta* I will sing it, *voi o veți aștepta* you will wait for her, etc. Such modal adverbs as *mai, și, tot* can be inserted between the auxiliary and the actual verb: *eu voi tot cânta* I will keep singing, *tu vei și lucra* you will also work, etc.

4.2.1.6.1.2. Forming the future 2 indicative

Future 2 is constructed with the present of the subjunctive preceded by the auxiliary element *o* in all the persons and numbers:

<i>o</i> + the present subjunctive of the actual verb
--

In the 3rd person plural the element *o* has the variant *or*: *ei o să aștepte aici* ~ *ei or să aștepte aici*; *ele o să se culce* ~ *ele or să se culce*.

The negative is formed with the negation *nu / n-* according to the general rule: *eu nu o (n-o) să lucrez*; *tu nu o (n-o) să lucrezi*, etc.

The placement of personal / reflexive pronouns and /or various modal adverbs (*mai, și, tot*) is the same as for the present subjunctive: *tu o să și lucrezi* you will also work; *eu nu o să mai lucrez / n-o să mai lucrez* I will not work anymore, etc.

4.2.1.6.1.3. Forming the future 3 indicative

Future 3 is constructed with the auxiliary *avea* that precede the present subjunctive forms of the actual verb :

singular	1 st	<i>am</i>	+ the present subjunctive of the actual verb
	2 nd	<i>ai</i>	
	3 rd	<i>are</i>	
plural	1 st	<i>avem</i>	
	2 nd	<i>aveți</i>	
	3 rd	<i>au</i>	

The negative is formed according to the general rule, the negation ***nu*** / ***n-*** comes before the auxiliary: ***eu nu am / n-am să lucrez, tu nu ai / n-ai să lucrezi***, etc.

The possibilities of inserting personal / reflexive pronouns and various modal adverbs are the same as for the present subjunctive: ***tu ai să și lucrezi*** you will also work; ***eu nu am să mai lucrez / n-am să mai lucrez*** I will not work anymore, etc.

The 1st and 2nd persons plural of future 3 are rarely used. All the other forms are frequent in the colloquial speech.

4.2.1.6.2. Usage of the future indicative

The absolute values of the Romanian future indicative (future 1, future 2 and future 3) are similar to the values of the independent future in other languages. The future indicates an action that will take place after the moment of speech:

Mâine voi sta acasă. Tomorrow I shall stay at home.

Mâine o să stau acasă. Tomorrow I shall stay at home.

Mâine am să stau acasă. Tomorrow I shall stay at home.

Since Romanian does not have continuous tenses, the Romanian future indicative can correspond to the continuous future in English:

Voi aștepta aici până vei avea timp pentru o discuție. I'll be waiting here until you have time for a discussion.

O să aștept aici până o să ai timp pentru o discuție. I'll be waiting here until you have time for a discussion.

Am să aștept aici până ai să ai timp pentru o discuție. I'll be waiting here until you have time for a discussion.

The future indicative can have relative values, in which case it can indicate:

- an action that precedes another future action:

După ce vei afla adevărul te vei liniști. After you find out the truth you'll find your peace.

După ce o să afli adevărul o să te liniștești. After you find out the truth you'll find your peace.

După ce ai să afli adevărul ai să te liniștești. After you find out the truth you'll find your peace.

- an action that is subsequent to another action in the past (in contrast to English, the Romanian future tense can be used after verbs in a past tense):

Am știut că vei găsi răspunsul corect! I knew you would find the correct answer!

Am știut că o să găsești răspunsul corect! I knew you would find the correct answer!

Am știut că ai să găsești răspunsul corect! I knew you would find the correct answer!

Thus, the future indicative can be used after a verb in a past tense to indicate a future action from a past point of view:

Știam că vei veni. I knew you would come. (future 1)

Mi-a spus atunci că o să plece și n-o să se mai întoarcă niciodată. She told me then that she would leave and never come back. (future 2)

Să fi știut el atunci că are să vină o nenorocire? I wonder if he could have known at that time that a disaster would come? (future 3)

Romanian does not require a sequence of tenses similar to the one in English; the future 1, 2 or 3 can be used after a past tense. There are other two future tenses in Romanian, the future perfect and the future in the past, that are specialized in relative values.

The future indicative may have the value of the imperative (with a certain imperative intonation):

Te vei duce la examen! Și vei vedea că totul o să fie bine! You will go to this exam! And you'll see that everything will be OK!

O să te duci la examen! Și o să vezi că totul o să fie bine! You will go to this exam! And you'll see that everything will be OK!

Ai să te duci la examen! Și ai să vezi că totul o să fie bine! You will go to this exam! And you'll see that everything will be OK!

The future can be used instead of the present indicative when introducing a request, in order to make the request sound firmer or more polite:

Te voi ruga să nu fumezi în casă! I'll ask you not to smoke inside!

O să te rog să nu fumezi în casă! I'll ask you not to smoke inside!

Am să te rog să nu fumezi în casă! I'll ask you not to smoke inside!

The future 1 indicative is not the most frequent future tense in current speech. It is required in the scientific or administrative language, as well as in the official style. Future 2 is the most frequently used future in current speech. Future 3 is common in informal familiar speech.

4.2.1.7. The future perfect indicative

4.2.1.7.1. Forming the future perfect indicative

The future perfect is formed with the future 1 indicative of the auxiliary verb ***a fi*** and the past participle of the actual verb :

singular	1 st	<i>voi fi</i>	+ the past participle of the actual verb
	2 nd	<i>vei fi</i>	
	3 rd	<i>va fi</i>	
plural	1 st	<i>vom fi</i>	
	2 nd	<i>veți fi</i>	
	3 rd	<i>vor fi</i>	

The negative is formed according to the general rule, with the negation ***nu*** placed before the auxiliary: ***nu voi fi lucrat***. The unstressed personal pronouns and the reflexive pronouns are placed before the auxiliary and after the negation ***nu***: ***mă voi fi calmat, nu mă voi fi calmat***, etc.

4.2.1.7.2. Usage of the future perfect indicative

The future perfect is a tense of relation that indicates a future action completed before another future action. Verbs in the future perfect usually give sentences an emotional turn. They intimate the desire to see the first future action before focusing on the second one. The future perfect is preceded by temporal or conditional adverbs and prepositions, such as: ***când*** when, ***atunci când*** when, ***imediat când*** as soon as, ***după ce*** after, ***imediat ce*** as soon as, ***odată ce*** once, ***cum*** once, ***imediat cum*** once, ***dacă*** if. The future perfect is mostly used in the literary style. In current speech one of the futures or the present indicative are more frequent:

Îți va da raportul după ce îl va fi terminat. He will give you the report when it's done.

Îți va da raportul după ce îl va termina. He will give you the report when it's done.

O să-ți dea raportul după ce îl termină. He will give you the report when it's done.

The future perfect often has a modal value. It can indicate a probable, possible, presumed action or state in a remote past:

Odinioară acolo se vor fi înălțat munți, acuma sunt oceane adânci albastre. Time was when mountains would have risen high down there, now there are deep blue oceans.

4.2.1.8. The future in the past indicative

4.2.1.8.1. Forming the future in the past indicative

The future in the past, neglected by the traditional Romanian grammars, is mentioned in some of them as a mere periphrastic construction meant to indicate a future action from a past point of view. However, the global meaning of this structure, its frequency, and the parallelism with the future 3 (auxiliary **a avea** + the subjunctive) are good reasons to consider it a well-defined verbal tense.

The future in the past is formed with the auxiliary **a avea** in the imperfect followed by the subjunctive forms of the actual verb: **aveam să aflu, aveai să constați, avea să ajungă, aveam să ne vedem**, etc.

singular	1 st	aveam	+ the present subjunctive of the actual verb
	2 nd	aveai	
	3 rd	avea	
plural	1 st	aveam	
	2 nd	aveați	
	3 rd	aveau	

The formation of the negative and the insertion of clitic pronouns and modal adverbs follow the general rules: **nu aveam să ne mai vedem** we would not see each other in the future, **nu aveau să construiască nimic** they would not build anything, etc.

4.2.1.8.2. Usage of the future in the past indicative

The future in the past is used in Romanian to indicate an action completed in the past, subsequent to another past action. It shows an action that would definitely happen in a future located sometime in the past from the point of view of the moment of speaking, but in the future from the point of view of the first action mentioned in the past. This tense occurs mainly in literary texts. In common speech the future action completed in the past is rendered either by one of the futures of the indicative, or by the compound perfect indicative:

Nimeni nu știa atunci că el avea să devină scriitorul cu cel mai mare succes din generația sa. Nobody knew at that time that he would become the most successful writer of his generation.

Nimeni nu știa atunci că el va deveni scriitorul cu cel mai mare succes din generația sa. Nobody knew at that time that he would become the most successful writer of his generation.

Peste mulți ani aveam să aflu că reputația mea de "copil bun" era foarte solidă. After many years I would find out that my reputation of being a "good kid" was very solid.

Peste mulți ani aveam să aflu că reputația mea de "copil bun" era foarte solidă. After many years I would find out that my reputation of being a "good kid" was very solid.

The verb in the future in the past is often accompanied by such temporal adverbial structures as: **mai târziu** later, **peste un timp** in one year, **peste ani** over the years, **la + noun** indicating the final moment of an action (**la sosire** at arrival, **la bătrânețe** in his / her late age, etc.).

4.2.2. The imperative

4.2.2.1. Forming the imperative

The imperative has two forms in Romanian: one for the 2nd pers. sing. and one for the 2nd pers. pl.

The forms of the 2nd **person plural**, both affirmative and negative, are identical to the forms of the 2nd person plural in the present indicative. The difference is made by the intonation, which is one of a request or an order.

	verbs in <i>-a</i>	verbs in <i>-ea</i>	verbs in <i>-e</i>	verbs in <i>-i, -î</i>
affirmative	<i>cântați!</i> <i>intrați!</i> <i>lucrați!</i> <i>întârziati!</i> <i>copiați!</i>	<i>vedeți!</i> <i>beți!</i> <i>tăceți!</i> <i>ședeți!</i>	<i>mergeți!</i> <i>umpleți!</i> <i>cereți!</i> <i>scrieți!</i>	<i>fugiți!</i> <i>veniți!</i> <i>bântuiți!</i> <i>locuiți!</i> <i>coborâți!</i> <i>hotărâți!</i>
negative	<i>nu cântați!</i> <i>nu intrați!</i> <i>nu lucrați!</i> <i>nu întârziati!</i> <i>nu copiați!</i>	<i>nu vedeți!</i> <i>nu beți!</i> <i>nu tăceți!</i> <i>nu ședeți!</i>	<i>nu mergeți!</i> <i>nu umpleți!</i> <i>nu cereți!</i> <i>nu scrieți!</i>	<i>nu fugiți!</i> <i>nu veniți!</i> <i>nu bântuiți!</i> <i>nu locuiți!</i> <i>nu coborâți!</i> <i>nu hotărâți!</i>

The 2nd **person singular** is not entirely identical to the 2nd person singular of the present indicative :

	verbs in <i>-a</i>	verbs in <i>-ea</i>	verbs in <i>-e</i>	verbs in <i>-i</i>	verbs in <i>-î</i>
affirmative	<i>așteaptă!</i> <i>intră!</i> <i>cântă!</i> <i>lucrează!</i> <i>întârzie!</i> <i>copiază!</i>	<i>bea!</i> <i>taci!</i> <i>șezi!</i> <i>vezi!</i>	<i>cere!</i> <i>scrie!</i> <i>mergi!</i> <i>trece!</i>	<i>găsește!</i> <i>oprește!</i> <i>oferă!</i> <i>acoperă!</i> <i>fugi!</i> <i>dormi!</i> <i>ieși!</i>	<i>coboară!</i> <i>hotărăște!</i>
negative	<i>nu aștepta!</i> <i>nu intra!</i> <i>nu cânta!</i> <i>nu lucra!</i> <i>nu întârzia!</i> <i>nu copia!</i>	<i>nu bea!</i> <i>nu vedea!</i> <i>nu tăcea!</i> <i>nu ședea!</i>	<i>nu cere!</i> <i>nu scrie!</i> <i>nu merge!</i> <i>nu trece!</i>	<i>nu găsi!</i> <i>nu opri!</i> <i>nu oferi!</i> <i>nu acoperi!</i> <i>nu fugi!</i> <i>nu dormi!</i> <i>nu ieși!</i>	<i>nu coborî!</i> <i>nu hotărî!</i>

- the 2nd pers. sing. affirmative imperative of the verbs in *-a*, *-î*, and in *-i* (that take the infix *-esc*), as well as of the transitive verbs in *-e*, *-ea* and *-i*, is identical to the form of 3rd person singular of the present indicative:

El așteaptă în curte. He is waiting in the yard. — *Așteaptă aici, te rog!* Wait here, please!

Ea bea prea multă cafea. She drinks too much coffee. — *Bea cafeaua și pe urmă plecăm!* Drink your coffee and then we'll leave!

El scrie un roman. He is writing a novel. — *Scrie mai repede!* Write faster!

Ea coboară din mașină. She is getting out of the car. — *Coboară, te rog, din mașina mea!* Please, get out of my car!

- the 2nd person singular affirmative of the intransitive verbs in *-e*, *-ea* and *-i* is identical to the form of 2nd person singular of the present indicative:

Tu mergi acasă. You are going home. — **Mergi mai repede!** Walk faster!

Tu dormi prea mult. You sleep too much. — **Dormi, e târziu și mâine te scoli devreme.** Sleep, it's late and you are getting up early in the morning.

- the 2nd person singular imperative of several transitive verbs, such as ***a vedea***, ***a auzi***, ***a avea*** is identical to the form of the 2nd person singular in the present indicative:

Tu vezi bine de aici? Can you see from here? — **Vezi ce face copilul ăla acolo!** Go and see what that child is doing out there!

- certain verbs can have the two forms of the imperative, according to their transitive or intransitive usage, like for instance ***a trece*** to go, to pass, to help someone to go over, to cross something:

Treci acolo! Get over there!

Trece-i tu strada și ai grijă să nu pățească ceva! Help them to cross the street and be careful nothing happens to them!

The negative of the 2nd person singular imperative is formed with the negation ***nu*** and **the infinitive** of the verb without the preposition ***a***: ***cântă!*** sing! – (***a cânta*** to sing) – ***nu cântă!*** do not sing!; ***fugi!*** run! – (***a fugi*** to run) – ***nu fugi!*** do not run!; ***râzi!*** laugh! – (***a râde*** to laugh) – ***nu râde!*** do not laugh!

Certain verbs have irregular affirmative imperative forms for the 2nd person singular (the verb ***a fi*** is also irregular in the 2nd pers. pl.). The negative imperative of all these verbs is formed according to the general rule:

infinitive	imperative affirmative	imperative negative
<i>a fi</i> to be	<i>fii! fiți!</i>	<i>nu fi! nu fiți!</i>
<i>a face</i> to do	<i>fă!</i>	<i>nu face!</i>
<i>a desface</i> to undo	<i>desfă!</i>	<i>nu desface!</i>
<i>a duce</i> to bring there	<i>du!</i>	<i>nu duce!</i>
<i>a aduce</i> to bring here	<i>adu!</i>	<i>nu aduce!</i>
<i>a conduce</i> to drive	<i>condu!</i>	<i>nu conduce!</i>
<i>a reduce</i> to reduce	<i>redu!</i>	<i>nu reduce!</i>
<i>a traduce</i> to translate	<i>tradu!</i>	<i>nu traduce!</i>
<i>a veni</i> to come	<i>vino!</i>	<i>nu veni!</i>
<i>a preveni</i> to warn	<i>previno!</i>	<i>nu preveni!</i>
<i>a reveni</i> to come again	<i>revino!</i>	<i>nu reveni!</i>
<i>a zice</i> to say	<i>zi!</i>	<i>nu zice!</i>

4.2.2.2. Combining the imperative with clitic pronouns

The position of the reflexive or unstressed personal pronouns used with the verbs in the imperative mood is different in the affirmative and the negative. In the affirmative the pronoun is attached to the verb in post-position (hyphenation is required):

Îmbracă-te gros! — ***Îmbrăcați-vă gros!*** Dress warmly! (reflexive pronoun in the accusative)

Amintește-ți! — ***Amintiți-vă!*** Remember! (reflexive pronoun in the dative)

Ajută-mă! — ***Ajutați-mă!*** Help me! (personal pronoun in the accusative)

Cântă-i! — ***Cântați-i!*** Sing to him! (personal pronoun in the dative)

In the negative the pronoun is placed between the negation and the verbal form, i.e. it comes before the verb as such:

Nu te îmbrăca gros! — ***Nu vă îmbrăcați gros!*** Don't dress warmly! (reflexive pronoun in the accusative)

Nu-ți (nu îi) aminti! — ***Nu vă amintiți!*** Do not remember! (reflexive pronoun in the dative)

Nu mă ajuta! — ***Nu mă ajutați!*** Don't help me! (personal pronoun in the accusative)

Nu-i (nu îi) cântă! — ***Nu-i (nu îi) cântați!*** Don't sing to him! (personal pronoun in the dative)

When the structure includes both a direct and an indirect object expressed by unstressed forms of the pronoun, the two pronouns combined are attached to the imperative, and they form together one phonetic word. The pronoun in the dative (the indirect object) is in the first position, immediately after the verb in the imperative. Double hyphenation is required:

Arată-mi pantoful! Show me the shoe! → *Arată-mi-l!* Show it to me!
Arată-i cartea! Show him/her the book! → *Arată-i-o!* Show it to him/her!
Arată-ne creionul! Show us the pencil! → *Arată-ni-l!* Show it to us!
Arată-le pantofii! Show them the shoes! → *Arată-li-i!* Show them to them!
Arată-mi cărțile! Show me the books! → *Arată-mi-le!* Show them to me!
Arată-le creioanele! Show them the pencils! → *Arată-li-le!* Show them to them!
Arătați-mi pantoful! Show me the shoe! → *Arătați-mi-l!* Show it to me!
Arătați-ne cartea! Show us the book! → *Arătați-ne-o!* Show it to us!
Arătați-le creionul! Show them the pencil! → *Arătați-li-l!* Show it to them!
Arătați-mi pantofii! Show me the shoes! → *Arătați-mi-i!* Show them to me!
Arătați-ne cărțile! Show us the books! → *Arătați-ni-le!* Show them to us!
Arătați-le creioanele! Show them the pencils! → *Arătați-li-le!* Show them to them!

In the negative, the two pronouns combined are inserted between the negative particle **nu** and the verb. The pronoun in the dative comes in the first position, immediately after the negation **nu**. Elision of the *î-* in pronominal forms beginning with *î-* is possible, but not required:

Nu îmi / nu-mi arăta pantoful! Don't show me the shoe! → *Nu mi-l arăta!* Don't show it to me!
Nu îi / nu-i arăta cartea! Don't show him / her the book! → *Nu i-o arăta!* Don't show it to him / her!
Nu ne arăta creionul! Don't show us the pencil! → *Nu ni-l arăta!* Don't show it to us!
Nu le arăta pantofii! Don't show them the shoes! → *Nu li-i arăta!* Don't show them to them!
Nu îmi / nu-mi arăta cărțile! Don't show me the books! → *Nu mi le arăta!* Don't show them to me!
Nu le arăta creioanele! Don't show them the pencils! → *Nu li le arăta!* Don't show them to them!
Nu îmi / nu-mi arătați pantoful! Don't show me the shoe! → *Nu mi-l arătați!* Don't show it to me!
Nu ne arătați cartea! Don't show us the book! → *Nu ne-o arătați!* Don't show it to us!
Nu le arătați creionul! Don't show them the pencil! → *Nu li-l arătați!* Don't show it to them!
Nu îmi / nu-mi arătați pantofii! Don't show me the shoes! → *Nu mi-i arătați!* Don't show them to me!
Nu ne arătați cărțile! Don't show us the books! → *Nu ni le arătați!* Don't show them to us!
Nu le arătați creioanele! Don't show them the pencils! → *Nu li-le arătați!* Don't show them to them!

4.2.3. The subjunctive

Verbs in the subjunctive mood indicate an action that is not viewed as accomplished, being accomplished or to be accomplished, but as a possible, desired, virtual action, imagined and not yet fulfilled. The subjunctive mood has two tenses, a present and a past tense. The subjunctive forms always include the conjunction *să*, which within these verbal forms plays the role of a morphological structural element.

4.2.3.1. The present subjunctive

The present subjunctive of the regular verbs is formed by adding specific endings to the stem of the infinitive. The actual verbal form is preceded by the conjunction *să*.

4.2.3.1.1. Basic rules of forming the present subjunctive

The actual verbal forms of the 1st and 2nd persons singular and plural are identical to the forms of the present indicative. It is the element *să* that indicates the subjunctive, as well as the functional context in which the subjunctive is used. Compare :

Eu lucrez. I work. and *Eu vreau să lucrez.* I want to work.
Tu lucrezi. You work. and *Tu poți să lucrezi.* You can work.
Noi lucrăm. We work. and *Noi nu vrem să lucrăm.* We don't want to work.
Voi lucrați. You work. and *Voi trebuie să lucrați.* You have to work.

In the 3rd person the present subjunctive differs from the present indicative. However, the easiest way to form it is to start from the present indicative.

The first basic rule for the 3rd person is: in the 3rd person singular the ending *-ă* of the present indicative changes into *-e* in the present subjunctive, and the ending *-e* of the present indicative changes into *-ă*:

ă → e: El cântă. He sings., but *El vrea să cânte.* He wants to sing.
e → ă: El vine. He is coming., but *El vrea să vină.* He wants to come.

The second rule for the 3rd person is: the forms of the 3rd person singular and of the 3rd person plural are always identical in the present subjunctive:

El vrea să cânte. He wants to sing. *Ei vor să cânte.* They want to sing
El vrea să vină. He wants to come. *Ei vor să vină.* They want to come.

When necessary, unstressed forms of the personal pronoun or the reflexive pronoun, as well as some modal adverbs (such as *mai*, *nu mai*, *și*, *tot*, *prea*) are inserted between the conjunction *să* and the actual verbal form:

Vreau să îmi arăți cartea. I want you to show me the book.
Vreau să i-o arăți și lui. I want you to show it to him, too.
Trebuie să te îmbraci gros, e frig afară. You have to dress warmly, it's cold outside.
Trebuie să mai stăm, nu putem să plecăm. We have to stay longer, we can't leave.
Vreau să și lucrez azi! I also want to work today!
Nu e bine să te tot plângi toată ziua! It's not good to keep complaining all day long!

The negative form of the present subjunctive is constructed with the negation *nu* inserted between the element *să* and the actual verb. When other elements (pronouns, adverbs) are inserted, the negation *nu* is always on the first position in the inserted group:

Vreau să nu întârziem. I want us not to be late.
Te rog să nu mai vorbești așa de repede. Please stop speaking so fast.
Vă rog să nu vă mai duceți acolo! Please don't go there again!

4.2.3.1.1.1. Forming the present subjunctive, 3rd person singular and plural, of the regular verbs

The 3rd person of the regular verbs is formed as follows :

the verbs in -a (1st conjugation)

	<i>a cânta</i> to sing	<i>a intra</i> to come in	<i>a lucra</i> to work	<i>a copia</i> to copy	<i>a întârzia</i> to be late
3 rd sing.: <i>el / ea</i>	<i>să cânte</i>	<i>să intre</i>	<i>să lucreze</i>	<i>să copieze</i>	<i>să întârzie</i>
3 rd pl.: <i>ei / ele</i>	<i>să cânte</i>	<i>să intre</i>	<i>să lucreze</i>	<i>să copieze</i>	<i>să întârzie</i>

the verbs in -ea (2nd conjugation)

	<i>a vedea</i> to see	<i>a putea</i> can, to be able, to be allowed
3 rd sing.: <i>el / ea</i>	<i>să vadă</i>	<i>să poată</i>
3 rd pl.: <i>ei / ele</i>	<i>să vadă</i>	<i>să poată</i>

the verbs in -e (3rd conjugation)

	<i>a merge</i> to walk	<i>a umple</i> to fill in	<i>a scrie</i> to write
3 rd sing.: <i>el / ea</i>	<i>să meargă</i>	<i>să umple</i>	<i>să scrie</i>
3 rd pl.: <i>ei / ele</i>	<i>să meargă</i>	<i>să umple</i>	<i>să scrie</i>

the verbs in -i (4th conjugation)

	<i>a fugi</i> to run	<i>a veni</i> to come	<i>a opri</i> to stop	<i>a locui</i> to live in, at	<i>a contribui</i> to contribute
3 rd sing.: <i>el / ea</i>	<i>să fugă</i>	<i>să vină</i>	<i>să oprească</i>	<i>să locuiască</i>	<i>să contribuie</i>
3 rd pl.: <i>ei / ele</i>	<i>să fugă</i>	<i>să vină</i>	<i>să oprească</i>	<i>să locuiască</i>	<i>să contribuie</i>

the verbs in -î (4th conjugation)

	<i>a coborî</i> to descend, to climb down	<i>a hotărî</i> to decide
3 rd sing. : <i>el, ea</i>	<i>să coboare</i>	<i>să hotărască</i>
3 rd pl. : <i>ei, ele</i>	<i>să coboare</i>	<i>să hotărască</i>

- all verbs that end in the 3rd pers. sing. of the present indicative in **-ie** (verbs of the 1st, 3rd and 4th conjugation, like *a se apropia* to come closer– *el se apropie*, *a întârzia* to be late– *el întârzie*, *a se speria* to get scared– *el se sperie*, *a încuia* to lock – *el încuie*, *a scrie* to write – *el scrie*, *a descrie* to describe – *el descrie*, *a ști* to know– *el știe*, *a contribui* to contribute – *el contribuie*) will have the same form in the subjunctive present: *el vrea să se apropie* he wants to come closer, *el poate să întârzie* he may come late, *el nu vrea să se sperie* he does not want to get scared, etc.
- the infixes **-eaz-** and **-eșt-/-ășt-** change into **-ez-** and **-asc-** in the 3rd person of the present subjunctive: *el lucrează* he works – *el vrea să lucreze* he wants to work, *el construiește* he builds – *el vrea să construiască* he wants to build, *el hotărăște* he decides – *el vrea să hotărască* he wants to decide

4.2.3.1.1.2. The present subjunctive of the irregular verbs

The irregular verbs form the present subjunctive as follows:

		<i>a fi</i> to be	<i>a avea</i> to have	<i>a da</i> to give	<i>a lua</i> to take	<i>a sta</i> to stay	<i>a mânca</i> to eat	<i>a bea</i> to drink
singular	1 st	<i>să fiu</i>	<i>să am</i>	<i>să dau</i>	<i>să iau</i>	<i>să stau</i>	<i>să mănânc</i>	<i>să beau</i>
	2 nd	<i>să fii</i>	<i>să ai</i>	<i>să dai</i>	<i>să iei</i>	<i>să stai</i>	<i>să mănânci</i>	<i>să bei</i>
	3 rd	<i>să fie</i>	<i>să aibă</i>	<i>să dea</i>	<i>să ia</i>	<i>să stea</i>	<i>să mănânce</i>	<i>să bea</i>
plural	1 st	<i>să fim</i>	<i>să avem</i>	<i>să dăm</i>	<i>să luăm</i>	<i>să stăm</i>	<i>să mâncăm</i>	<i>să bem</i>
	2 nd	<i>să fiți</i>	<i>să aveți</i>	<i>să dați</i>	<i>să luați</i>	<i>să stați</i>	<i>să mâncați</i>	<i>să beți</i>
	3 rd	<i>să fie</i>	<i>să aibă</i>	<i>să dea</i>	<i>să ia</i>	<i>să stea</i>	<i>să mănânce</i>	<i>să bea</i>

4.2.3.1.2. Usage of the present subjunctive

The verb in the present subjunctive is mainly used as a secondary verb after a main one, frequently after verbs that express wish, preference, permission, possibility, request, advice, etc. : *a vrea* want, wish, *a dori* wish, *a prefera* prefer, *a lăsa* let, allow, *a ruga* ask, *a sfătui* advice, *a sugera* suggest, *a recomanda* recommend, *a cere* ask, require, *a interzice* forbid, *a permite* allow, give permission, *a se teme* be afraid, etc.:

Vreau să mănânc. I want to eat.

Prefer să rămânem acasă. I prefer that we stay home.

Lasă-mă să stau aici! Let me sit here!

Te rog să-mi scrii în fiecare zi! I'm asking you to write me every day!

L-am sfătuit să nu se ducă acolo. I advised him not to go there.

A sugerat să vorbim despre altceva. He suggested that we talk of something else.

The present subjunctive is also used after the verbs *a putea* can, be able and *a ști* know:

Noi putem deja să vorbim destul de bine românește. We can already speak Romanian pretty well.

El știe să rezolve tot felul de situații delicate. He knows how to solve all kinds of delicate situations.

The present subjunctive is used after such impersonal verbs and verbal structures as : *trebuie* must, *e necesar* it is necessary, *e obligatoriu* it is compulsory, *e bine* it is good, *e rău* it is bad, *e comod* it is comfortable, *e ușor* it is easy, etc., as well as after some reflexive impersonal verbs used in the 3rd person : *se poate* it is possible, *se cuvine* it is customary, it is expected (about a certain behaviour), *se cade* it is decent, it is expected by a community (to act in a certain way), *se recomandă* it is recommended, etc. :

Trebuie să mergem! We have to go! We must go!

E absolut necesar să vorbim cu el. It is absolutely necessary for us to talk to him.

Se poate să rămânem acasă? Can we stay home?

E ușor să stai acasă și să nu faci nimic! It's easy to stay home and do nothing!

Nu se cuvine să stați acasă. It would not be polite for you to stay home.

Se recomandă să nu ieșiți noaptea pe stradă. It is recommended not to get out at night.

The present subjunctive is used after the verb *a plăcea* to like with the dative :

Îmi place să lucrez dimineața. I like working in the morning.

Îmi place să citesc. I like reading.

Îți place să te uiți la televizor? Do you like watching TV?

Copiii le place să meargă la film. Kids like to go to the movies.

Îmi place să nu mă deranjeze nimeni. I like not to be disturbed by anybody.

Nu-mi place să mă deranjeze nimeni. I don't like to be disturbed by anybody.

When the subject of the first verb and of the subjunctive are different and the subject of the subjunctive is to be expressed, the conjunction *ca să*, split into two by the subject of the subjunctive, is used at the beginning of the subordinate clause instead of *să*:

Vreau să stai acasă. I want that you stay home., but also *Vreau ca tu să stai acasă.* I want you to stay home.

E mai bine să stea acasă azi. It's better for them to stay home today., but *E mai bine ca ei să stea acasă azi.* It is better that they stay home today.

The present subjunctive is used in constructions with the verb *a avea* to have + **interrogatives** (pronouns, in different cases, with or without prepositions: *ce* what, *cine* who, adverbs: *unde* where, *când* when, *cum* how, *de ce* why) that show possession / non-possession or presence / absence of an object, person, etc. or a certain circumstance:

— *Ai cu ce să te îmbraci la petrecere?* Do you have what to wear at the party?

— *Nu am ce să mănânc.* I don't have anything to eat.

— *Nu avem unde să mergem.* There is no place for us to go to.

— *Vei avea când să citești toată cartea?* Will you have time to read the whole book?

— *N-am avut de ce să vorbesc cu el.* There was no reason for me to talk to him.

The present subjunctive functions in different types of circumstantial clauses, after certain compound conjunctions that include *să* (*fără să* without, *în loc să* instead of, *ca să* in order to, *înainte să* before, prior to, etc.) :

Mereu vorbește fără să se gândească. He / she always speaks without thinking. (modality)

Mă duc la magazin ca să cumpăr un cadou. I'm going to the store to buy a present. (purpose)

Vin la voi cu condiția să rămân peste noapte. I'm coming to your place only if I can stay overnight. (condition)

The subjunctive is also used in a truncated construction with the adverb *numai* just, only that implies the idea of desire, wish:

Numai să ajungem mai repede. It's just that I want us to get there faster.

Numai să vină și ei ! It's only that we want them to come, too.

The Romanian present subjunctive is mostly used in constructions where English uses the infinitive or the gerund, but also the subjunctive.

When used independently, the subjunctive indicates a desire, a fear, an order or a request, i.e. has modal and imperative values. The present subjunctive is used in questions having the modal value of 'should':

— *Să plec?* Should I leave?

— *Să mai stau?* Should I stay longer?

— *Unde să plecăm?* Where should we go? / Where could we go?

— *De ce să plece?* Why should he / she leave?

— *Ce să fac?* What should I do? / What can I do?

The present subjunctive is often used as an imperative, mainly for other persons than the 2nd person. When used with the 2nd person, it is even stronger than the imperative. The 1st person plural can be preceded by the interjection *hai*, which intensifies the imperative meaning of the structure :

— *Să mergem!* Let's go!

— *Hai să mergem!* Let's go!

— *Să plece imediat!* I want him to leave immediately!

— *Să-mi aduci un pahar de apă!* Bring me a glass of water!

The subjunctive present is used in certain set phrases used as greetings in specific situations:

Să crești mare! (to a child, after he / she declared his / her age or thanked for something)

Să ne (să-ți, să vă) fie de bine! (to people who have finished their meals)

Să-l (să o, să le etc.) porți sănătos / sănătoasă! (when somebody shows up in new clothes, with new shoes)

Dumnezeu să-l (s-o, să-i, să le) ierte! (after mentioning the name of a person who died recently)

4.2.3.2. The past subjunctive

4.2.3.2.1. Forming the past subjunctive

The past tense of the subjunctive mood has one form for all the persons and numbers of all the verbs:

să fi + past participle of the verb

Different elements can be inserted between the element *să* and the auxiliary *fi*:

- the negation *nu*, to form the negative of the past subjunctive: *să nu fi fost, să nu fi avut, să nu fi cântat, să nu fi intrat*, etc.
- one or more adverbs, such as *mai, cam*: *să mai fi repetat, să mai fi rămas*, etc.
- the unstressed forms of the personal pronouns or reflexive pronouns, isolated or in combinations: *să mă fi ajutat cineva, să te fi îmbrăcat mai gros*, etc.
- one or several pronouns followed by an adverb: *să te mai fi sunat încă o dată*, etc.
- when the adverb *nu* is part of an inserted group it comes on the first position is the group: *să nu te mai fi văzut niciodată în viața mea*, etc.

4.2.3.2.2. Usage of the past subjunctive

The past subjunctive is used after the past optative-conditional of the verbs that require the subjunctive (*a trebui, a vrea, a putea, a fi bine, a fi necesar*, etc.), in constructions that express the necessity, the desire in the past :

Ar fi trebuit să fi rămas acasă. We should have stayed home.

Ar fi fost bine să mai fi locuit în acest apartament încă un an. It would have been good if we could have lived in this apartment one more year.

When used independently, the past subjunctive indicates a regret related to a past accomplished action that is seen as undesirable at the moment of speaking:

Să fi rămas acasă... If we stayed home. It would have been better if we stayed home.

4.2.3.3. Structures with the verb *a putea*

After the verb *a putea* can, may, be able, be allowed, both the present subjunctive and the infinitive without the element *a* can be used in standard Romanian. The two constructions are perfectly synonymous:

El nu poate să vină astăzi la facultate. = El nu poate veni astăzi la facultate. He cannot come to school today.

Ea n-a putut să sune ieri. = Ea n-a putut suna ieri. She could not call yesterday.

Vom putea să stăm mâine acasă. = Vom putea sta mâine acasă. We'll be able to stay home tomorrow.

The structure *a putea + infinitive* has certain particularities related to the order of the elements when the second verb is a reflexive or a pronominal one :

- the personal or reflexive pronoun will come before the verb *a putea* :

Pot să mă îmbrac singură. ↔ Mă pot îmbrăca singură. I can dress without any help.

Am putut să mă îmbrac singură. ↔ M-am putut îmbrăca singură. I could dress without any help.

Voi putea să mă îmbrac singură. ↔ Mă voi putea îmbrăca singură. I will be able to dress without any help.

Pot să-mi cumpăr o umbrelă. ↔ Îmi pot cumpăra o umbrelă. I can buy myself an umbrella.

Am putut să-mi cumpăr o umbrelă. ↔ Mi-am putut cumpăra o umbrelă. I could buy an umbrella.

Voi putea să-mi cumpăr o umbrelă. ↔ Îmi voi putea cumpăra o umbrelă. I will be able to buy an umbrella.

Poate să mă sune în fiecare zi. ↔ Mă poate suna în fiecare zi. He can call me every day.

A putut să mă sune în fiecare zi. ↔ M-a putut suna în fiecare zi. He could call me every day.

Va putea să mă sune în fiecare zi. ↔ Mă va putea suna în fiecare zi. He will be able to call me every day.

- when the verb **a putea** is in the compound perfect and the unstressed personal pronoun (direct object) is the 3rd person singular feminine **o**, the pronoun will come after the verb **a putea**, according to the general rule of combining the compound perfect with unstressed personal pronouns:
Am putut să o / s-o găsesc ușor. ↔ **Am putut-o găsi ușor.** I could easily find her.
- if the verb **a putea** is in the negative, the negation **nu** will come before the personal or reflexive pronoun:
Nu pot să mă îmbrac singură. ↔ **Nu mă pot îmbrăca singură.** I cannot dress without help.
etc.

4.2.4. The optative-conditional

The verb in Romanian can express an action as a real one (in the indicative mood) or as a possible but not accomplished yet one (in the subjunctive mood). If an action is seen as desired or conditioned, or as a condition to fulfill another action, the verb will be in the optative-conditional mood.

Citec un roman polițist ca să mă relaxez. I'm reading a detective story to relax. **Ieri seară am citit un roman polițist.** I read a detective story last night. **Când ai sunat citeam un roman polițist.** I was reading a detective story when you called. **Diseară voi citi un roman polițist.** I will read a detective story tonight. (indicative mood, various tenses)

Vreau să citec un roman polițist. I want to read a detective story. (subjunctive mood)

Aș citi un roman polițist. I would (like to) read a detective story. **Aș fi citit un roman polițist.** I would have read a detective story. (optative-conditional mood, present and past)

The optative-conditional mood has present and past tense forms.

4.2.4.1. The present optative-conditional

4.2.4.1.1. Forming the present optative-conditional

The present tense of the optative-conditional mood is formed with the auxiliary elements **aș, ai, ar, am, ați, ar** and the **infinitive** (without the particle **a**) of the actual verb:

sing	1 st	aș	+ the infinitive of the actual verb
	2 nd	ai	
	3 rd	ar	
pl	1 st	am	
	2 nd	ați	
	3 rd	ar	

- the auxiliaries for the 3rd person singular and plural are identical, accordingly the forms 3rd person singular and plural are identical: **el / ea ar cânta** he / she would sing – **ei / ele ar cânta** they would sing

The negative form takes the negation **nu** before the auxiliary. The hyphenated form with the elision of **-u** is frequent, but not required : **nu aș cânta / n-aș cânta** I would not sing, **nu ai cânta / n-ai cânta** you would not sing, etc.

The unstressed forms of the personal pronouns and the reflexive pronouns are placed before the auxiliary element. Elision / synaeresis and hyphenation are required, like in the compound perfect indicative. The feminine unstressed personal pronoun in the accusative **o** comes after the infinitive of the verb:

M-aș îmbrăca mai gros. I would like to dress more warmly.

Te-ai duce tu în locul meu? Would you agree / like to go there in my place?

Aș căuta-o mâine, dar nu știu dacă vine la facultate. I would try to find her tomorrow, but I don't know if she will come to school.

Nu mi-aş pune rochia neagră azi. I wouldn't wear (I don't feel like wearing) the black dress today.

Nu mi-aş pune-o astăzi. I would not wear it today.

Such modal adverbs as *mai*, *cam*, *tot*, *şi*, *mai şi* can be inserted between the auxiliary element and the infinitive :

Aş mai sta puţin. I'd like to stay a little longer.

Nu mi-aş mai complica viaţa inutil. I wouldn't unnecessarily complicate my life again.

4.2.4.1.2. Usage of the present optative-conditional

The present optative-conditional indicates a desire, a wish, an intention expressed at the moment of speaking:

Aş citi ceva. I would (I'd like to) read something.

Dacă aş avea mai mult timp! I wish I had more time! If I only had more time!

The idea of desired action implies an impediment (1), a projection of the action that can be accomplished in the future (2), or a necessary condition (3):

(1) **Aş citi un roman poliţist, dar nu am timp.** I would read a detective story, but I don't have time.

(2) **Aş citi un roman poliţist şi exact asta voi face mai târziu.** I would like to read a detective story, and that's precisely what I'll do later.

(3) **Aş citi un roman poliţist dacă aş avea timp.** I would read a detective story if I had time.

The optative-conditional mood is used to express both the desired action (***aş citi*** in the example below), and the condition necessary to fulfill the desired action (***aş avea timp***). The verb designating the condition is preceded by the conditional conjunctions ***dacă*** / ***de*** if:

Dacă aş avea timp / de-aş avea timp, aş citi un roman poliţist. If I had time, I would read a detective story.

With verbs expressing *per se* the wish, desire, preference, necessity, like ***a dori*** to wish, ***a vrea*** to want, ***a plăcea*** (impersonal) to like, ***a trebui*** (impersonal) must, the optative-conditional is used instead of the present indicative to make the discourse milder or more polite:

Aş vrea să nu mai fumaţi în casă. I would like you to stop smoking inside.

Ar trebui să plecaţi. You should go.

With verbs of request (***a ruga*** to ask, ***a putea*** can, may, ***a vrea*** to want), the present optative-conditional used instead of the present indicative makes the request firmer or more polite:

Te-aş ruga să mă ajuţi. vs. **Te rog să mă ajuţi.** I'd like to ask you to help me.

Ai putea să mă ajuţi? vs. **Poţi să mă ajuţi?** Could you help me?

Ai vrea să ne întâlnim mâine? vs. **Vrei să ne întâlnim mâine?** Would you like us to meet tomorrow?

After the structures ***ca şi cum*** as if, ***de parcă*** as if, the optative-conditional is used to make a comparison, the so-called "unreal comparison":

Te-ai îmbrăcat de parcă am fi în Siberia! You dressed as if we were in Siberia!

Se comportă ca şi cum colegii ar fi sclavii lui! He's behaving as if the colleagues were his slaves!

The optative-conditional has also the value of potentiality, probability or uncertainty:

N-aş zice că te-ai îngrăşat. I wouldn't say you've gained weight.

N-ar putea fi mai fericită decât acum! She couldn't be happier than she is now!

Am auzit că plecarea s-ar amâna. I heard that the departure might be delayed.

The present optative-conditional can be seen in idiomatic structures with reverted word order that express different types of emotional involvement in a situation, from the most positive feelings up to the expression of the worst desires, like in curses:

Mânca-te-ar mama / tata! (expression used by parents or other adults when showing love to children, used more generally to express good feelings)

Lua-te-ar dracu! Go to hell!

Vedea-te-aş mort! I'd like to see you dead!

With the same inversion (or without it) the present optative-conditional is used (generally in the 1st person singular) to express doubt (such verbs as *a se mira* to be amazed, *a se îndoii* to doubt):

M-aş mira să fie așa. – **Mira-m-aş.** I would be amazed if that was the case.

M-aş îndoii să fie așa. – **Îndoii-m-aş.** I doubt it.

4.2.4.2. The past optative-conditional

4.2.4.2.1. Forming the past optative-conditional

The past tense of the optative-conditional is built with two auxiliary elements : *aş, ai, ar, am, ați, ar* + the invariable auxiliary *fi* and the past participle of the actual verb

sing	1 st	<i>aş fi</i>	+ the past participle of the actual verb
	2 nd	<i>ai fi</i>	
	3 rd	<i>ar fi</i>	
Pl	1 st	<i>am fi</i>	
	2 nd	<i>ați fi</i>	
	3 rd	<i>ar fi</i>	

- the 3rd person singular and plural forms are identical : *el / ea ar fi cântat* he / she would have sung– *ei / ele ar fi cântat* they would have sung

In the negative, the negation *nu* comes before the first auxiliary. The elision of *-u* is possible, but not compulsory : *nu aş fi cântat / n-aş fi cântat, nu ai fi cântat / n-ai fi cântat*, etc.

The unstressed forms of the personal pronouns and the reflexive pronouns are placed before the first auxiliary element, and the elision is compulsory. The feminine unstressed personal pronoun in the accusative *o* comes after the past participle of the verb:

M-aş fi îmbrăcat mai gros, dacă aş fi ştiut că e așa de frig. Had I known it was so cold, I would have dressed more warmly.

Te-ai fi dus tu în locul meu ? Would you have liked to go there in my place ?

L-ar fi întrebat despre sora lui, dar nu a îndrăznit. He would have liked to ask about his sister, but he didn't dare to.

Aş fi căutat-o ieri, dar nu m-am dus la facultate. I would have looked for her yesterday, but I didn't go to school.

The modal adverbs *mai, cam* can be inserted between the first and the second auxiliary :

Aş mai fi stat puţin. I would have liked to stay a little longer.

The modal adverbs *tot, şi* can be inserted between the second auxiliary element and the past participle :

Aş fi tot stat la soare, dar la un moment dat mi s-a făcut rău. I would have liked to stay and stay in the sun, but at a certain moment I started feeling bad.

Eu aş fi şi mâncat ceva, dar nu mi-a oferit nimeni nimic. I would have liked to eat something, but nobody offered anything to me.

4.2.4.2.2. Usage of the past optative-conditional

The past optative-conditional indicates a desire, a wish, an intention located in the past and unfulfilled :

Aş fi citit ceva. I would have liked to read something.

The unfulfilled action implies an impediment (1) or a condition imposed by another action (2) in the past:

(1) **Aş fi citit un roman poliţist, dar nu am avut timp.** I would have read a detective story, but I didn't have time.

(2) **Aş fi citit un roman poliţist dacă aş fi avut timp.** I would have read a detective story if I had had time.

The optative-conditional mood is also used to express the condition itself :

Dacă aş fi avut timp, aş fi citit un roman poliţist. Had I had time, I would have read a detective story.

As for the present, the main action and the condition for that action to be / not to be fulfilled are expressed by verbs in the optative-conditional.

After the structures *ca și cum, de parcă* as if, the past optative-conditional is used to make an unreal comparison in the past :

S-a îmbarcat de parcă ar fi fost în Siberia! He dressed as if he was in Siberia!

Se comporta ca și cum colegii ar fi fost sclavii lui! He was behaving as if the colleagues had been his slaves!

The value of potentiality, probability or uncertainty of the optative-conditional can be also expressed in the past:

N-aș fi zis că ea este fiica ta. I wouldn't have thought that she was your daughter.

N-ar fi putut fi mai fericită decât era! She could not have been happier than she was!

Am auzit că plecarea s-ar fi amânat. I had heard that the departure had been delayed (but I don't know it for sure).

The past optative-conditional of the verbs that require the subjunctive (*a trebui, a vrea, a putea, a fi bine, a fi necesar*, etc.) is used in constructions with the past subjunctive that express the necessity, the desire in the past :

Ar fi trebuit să fi rămas acasă. We should have stayed home.

Ar fi fost bine să mai fi locuit în acest apartament încă un an. It would have been good if we could have lived in this apartment one more year.

The past optative-conditional of the verb *a putea* followed by the present subjunctive is used in reproaches:

Ai fi putut să-mi telefonezi! You could have called me!

Ar fi putut să vină la timp! He could have come in time!

In order to express the unfulfilled desire and the condition in the past, the imperfect indicative can be used instead of the past optative-conditional:

Dacă am fi luat biletele de avion ieri, nu ar mai fi fost nevoie să ne ducem la agenție și astăzi! If we had bought the plane tickets yesterday, we wouldn't have had to go to the agency again today! = ***Dacă luam biletele de avion ieri, nu mai era nevoie să ne ducem la agenție și astăzi!***

N-ar fi putut fi mai fericită! She could not have been happier! = ***Nu putea fi mai fericită!***

The verbs that require the subjunctive (*a trebui, a vrea, a fi bine, a fi indicat*, etc.) can also be used in the imperfect instead of the past optative-conditional to express the necessity in the past. After such verbs the tense to be used is the past subjunctive:

Ar fi trebuit să fi plecat mai devreme. We should have left earlier. = ***Trebuia să fi plecat mai devreme.***

4.2.5. The presumptive

The presumptive mood shows presupposition, hypothesis, hope, doubt. The presumptive has a present tense and a past tense. The present tense also has a progressive version, which is not typical for the Romanian verb.

4.2.5.1. The present presumptive (forms and usage)

The present presumptive is formed with an auxiliary element (*oi, o, om, oți, or*) and the infinitive form of the actual verb without the particle *a*:

singular	1 st	<i>oi</i>	+ the infinitive of the actual verb
	2 nd	<i>oi</i>	
	3 rd	<i>o</i>	
plural	1 st	<i>om</i>	
	2 nd	<i>oți</i>	
	3 rd	<i>or</i>	

- the auxiliary elements for the 1st person singular and for the 2nd person singular are identical : *eu oi veni* I might come, *tu oi veni* you might come

The negative is formed with the negation *nu* before the auxiliary. Elision is possible, but not required : *el nu o avea timp* / *n-o avea timp* maybe he does not have time.

The unstressed forms of the personal pronouns and the reflexive pronouns are placed before the auxiliary element, and the elision or synaeresis is compulsory. The feminine unstressed personal pronoun in the accusative *o* comes after the infinitive :

S-o gândi că noi am plecat deja. Maybe he will think that we have already left.

Si-o imaginea că am plecat ! He will imagine we left, won't he ?

Ne-om mai întâlni cândva ! Maybe we will meet again some day !

Nu fi trist că nu ai găsit cartea, oi găsi-o tu altundeva ! Don't be sad you didn't find the book, you might find it somewhere else.

Such adverbs as *mai, și, cam, tot* can be inserted between the auxiliary element and the infinitive form :

Oi mai veni și altă dată să te văd. I will probably come / I might come to see you again some other time, too.

The present of the presumptive shows a presupposition related to the present moment :

O fi acasă. He / she might be at home.

O lucra acuma la articolul pe care îl scrie. He / she might be working on the article he / she is writing.

It also shows the hope related to a future possible but uncertain action (note the tendency to use the personal pronoun subject after the verb) :

Ne-om mai vedea noi într-o bună zi. We might meet again some day.

Ti-oi rezolva tu toate problemele mai curând sau mai târziu. I hope you'll have all your problems solved sooner or later.

Since the presumptive mood is used to express an uncertain, possible or probable action (present / future or past) which is suspected by the speaker, it has modal values :

O fi bolnav grav. He might be seriously ill.

4.2.5.2. The present progressive presumptive (forms and usage)

The present progressive presumptive is used only to show the supposition, the hypothesis in the actual present of the moment of speech. It is formed with the same auxiliaries, followed by the infinitive of the verb **a fi** and the gerund of the actual verb :

singular	1 st	oi	+ fi + the gerund of the actual verb
	2 nd	oi	
	3 rd	o	
plural	1 st	om	
	2 nd	oți	
	3 rd	or	

- the auxiliary elements for the 1st person singular and for the 2nd person singular are identical : **eu oi fi stând degeaba** maybe I'm sitting doing nothing, **tu oi fi stând degeaba** maybe you are sitting doing nothing

The negative is formed with the negation **nu** before the auxiliary. Elision is possible, but not required : **el nu o fi având timp** / **n-o fi având timp** maybe he does not have time.

The unstressed forms of the personal pronouns and the reflexive pronouns are placed before the auxiliary element, and the elision or synaeresis is compulsory. The feminine unstressed personal pronoun in the accusative **o** comes after the gerund :

S-o fi gândind că noi am plecat deja. Maybe he thinks that we have already left.

Si-o fi imaginând că am plecat ! He imagines we left, doesn't he ?

O fi îngrijind-o mama ei, nu-ți mai face probleme. Probably her mother is taking care of her, stop worrying.

Such modal adverbs as **mai**, **tot**, **și**, **cam** can be inserted into the structure (**mai** before the element **fi**; **tot**, **și**, **cam** after the element **fi**):

S-o mai fi odihnind și ea, că muncește prea mult. She might be resting, she works too much anyway.

S-or fi și întors, cine știe... Maybe they are already back, who knows...

Since the presumptive mood is used to express an uncertain, possible or probable action (present / future or past) which is suspected by the speaker, it has modal values :

O fi având vreo boală gravă. He might have a serious disease. I'm afraid he might have a serious disease.

4.2.5.3. The past presumptive (forms and usage)

The past presumptive is formed with a combination of auxiliary elements (**oi fi**, **o fi**, **om fi**, **oți fi**, **or fi**) and the past participle of the verb

singular	1 st	oi fi	+ the past participle of the actual verb
	2 nd	oi fi	
	3 rd	o fi	
plural	1 st	om fi	
	2 nd	oți fi	
	3 rd	or fi	

- the auxiliary elements for the 1st person singular and for the 2nd person singular are identical : **eu oi fi venit** maybe I came, **tu oi fi venit** maybe you came

The negative is formed with the negation **nu** before the auxiliary. Elision is possible, but not compulsory : **el nu o fi avut timp / n-o fi avut timp** maybe he did not have time.

The unstressed forms of the personal pronouns and the reflexive pronouns are placed before the first auxiliary element. The feminine unstressed personal pronoun in the accusative **o** comes after the past participle:

Ne-om mai fi întâlnit cândva. We might have met some time before.

Nu te mira că nu ți-a mai cerut cartea, o fi găsit-o altundeva. Don't be amazed she didn't ask for the book anymore, she might have found it somewhere else.

Such modal adverbs as **mai**, **cam**, **și**, **tot** may be inserted into the structure (**mai** and **cam** between the two auxiliary elements and the past participle; **și** and **tot** after the second auxiliary):

O mai fi trecut și altădată pe la mine. He might have stopped by other times, too.

O fi tot sunat, de unde să știu eu?! He might have kept calling, how would I know?!

Since the presumptive mood is used to express an uncertain, possible or probable action (present/future or past) which is suspected by the speaker, it has modal values:

O fi avut vreo boală gravă. Maybe he had a serious disease. He might have had a serious disease.

4.3. Non-personal moods

4.3.1. The infinitive

The forms of the infinitive, as well as its usage as an element of certain verbal forms are presented within section 4.1.3.

The independent infinitive with **a**, both present and past, can be used as a subject in the sentence :

A citi este marea ei bucurie. Reading is her biggest joy.

A fi vorbit cu el ar fi fost o mare onoare. Talking to him would have been a great honor.

It can also be used with different prepositions with attributive or circumstantial values :

Plăcerea de a vorbi cu ea este uriașă. The pleasure of talking to her is immense. (attribute)

Plăcerea de a fi vorbit cu tine a fost uriașă. The pleasure of having talked to you is immense. (attribute)

— **De ce vorbești înainte de a gândi?** Why are you talking before thinking? (circumstantial of time)

— **Vorbești înainte de a fi gândit.** You talk before having thought in advance. (circumstantial of time)

— **De ce m-ai sunat? Numai pentru a mă întrista?** Why did you call me? Only to make me feel sad? (circumstantial of purpose)

— **De ce m-ar fi sunat? Numai pentru a mă fi întristat?** Why would he have called me? Only to make me feel sad? (circumstantial of purpose)

El vorbește fără a comunica nici o idee. He talks without conveying any idea. (circumstantial of modality)

A vorbit fără a fi comunicat vreo idee. He delivered a speech without conveying any idea. (circumstantial of modality)

The present infinitive reflexive passive with **a** is used in instructions, requirements and interdictions:

A se păstra la rece. Store in a cold place.

A se feri de foc. Keep away from open flame.

A nu se lăsa la îndemâna copiilor. Keep out of reach of children.

The present infinitive without **a** is used in different verbal constructions:

- after the verb **a putea** can, may, be able to and **a ști** to know (rarely, regional) instead of the subjunctive:

Pot vorbi românește. I can speak Romanian.

Știu vorbi românește. I know how to speak Romanian.

- with the verb **a avea** to have followed by interrogative pronouns or adverbs, with or without prepositions (**ce** what, **cine** who, **unde** where, **când** when, **cum** how), in structures showing possession (more frequently in the negative):

— **Ai cu ce scrie?** Do you have a pen / pencil /etc. to write with?

— *N-am cu cine vorbi.* There is nobody I can talk to.

— *N-am când merge cu voi la film.* I don't have time to go with you to the movies.

4.3.2. The past participle

The forms of the past participle, as well as its functions as a component of compound verbal forms, are presented in section 4.1.4.

The past participle can also be used as an adjective, in which capacity it functions as a four forms adjective, and takes the gender, number and case of the modified noun : a aprecia to appreciate, to value – *apreciat, apreciată, apreciați, apreciate* :

El este un pianist apreciat. He is a highly valued pianist.

Fiica lui este o pianistă apreciată. His daughter is a highly valued pianist.

Ei sunt niște muzicieni apreciați. They (masc.) are highly valued musicians.

Ele sunt niște scriitoare apreciate. They (fem.) are highly valued writers.

4.3.3. The gerund

4.3.3.1. Forming the gerund

The gerund is formed from the stem of the infinitive, with the suffixes *-ând* or *-ind*.

<i>-ând</i>				<i>-ind</i>		
vbs. in <i>-a</i>	vbs. in <i>-ea</i>	vbs. in <i>-e</i>	vbs. in <i>-î</i>	vbs. in <i>-i</i>	vbs. in <i>-ia / -chea / -ghea</i>	vbs. in <i>-ie</i>
<i>a lucra</i> – <i>lucrând</i> working	<i>a vedea</i> – <i>văzând</i> seeing	<i>a merge</i> – <i>mergând</i> walking	<i>a hotărî</i> – <i>hotărând</i> deciding	<i>a iubi</i> – <i>iubind</i> loving	<i>a copia</i> – <i>copiind</i> copying	<i>a scrie</i> – <i>scriind</i> writing

- the verbs ending in *-a*, *-e*, *-ea* and *-î* form the gerund with the suffix *-ând*
- the verbs ending in *-i* form the gerund with the suffix *-ind*
- the verbs ending in *-chea* (like *a îngenunchea* to kneel), *-ghea* (like *a supraveghea* to supervise, to take care, to watch), *-ia* (*a mângâia* to caress, *a copia* to copy), as well as the verb *a scrie* to write and its derivatives (*a transcrie* to copy, *a prescrie* to prescribe, etc.) also form the gerund with the suffix *-ind*
- phonetic changes may occur in the stem

The gerund forms of the irregular verbs are: *a fi* – *fiind* being, *a avea* – *având* having, *a sta* – *stând* staying, *a da* – *dând* giving, *a lua* – *luând* taking, *a mânca* – *mâncând* eating, *a bea* – *bând* drinking, *a ști* – *știind* knowing, *a vrea* – *vrând* wanting.

The unstressed forms of the personal pronoun are attached to the gerund form in post-position. Hyphenation is compulsory. A final vowel *-u* is added to the verbal form (unless the combination is gerund + unstressed feminine 3rd person singular personal pronoun in accusative *o*): *văzându-mă* seeing me, *văzându-te* seeing you, *văzându-ne* seeing us, *văzându-vă* seeing you, *văzându-i* seeing them, *văzându-le* seeing them, but *văzându-o* seeing her; *dându-mi* giving me, *dându-ți* giving you, *dându-i* giving him / her, *dându-ne* giving us, *dându-vă* giving you, *dându-le* giving them. The combination gerund + personal pronoun form one phonetic word with one stress.

The reflexive pronouns are also attached through hyphenation to the gerund in post-position, in which case the gerund takes the final *-u*. The gerund, which is an impersonal mood, accepts reflexive pronouns of all persons, which confers the gerund personal values: *îmbrăcându-mă*, *îmbrăcându-te*, *îmbrăcându-se*, *îmbrăcându-ne*, *îmbrăcându-vă*,

îmbrăcându-se dressing; *imaginându-mi*, *imaginându-ți*, *imaginându-și*, *imaginându-ne*, *imaginându-vă*, *imaginându-și* imagining. The combination gerund + reflexive pronoun form one phonetic word with one stress.

When the verb operates with combinations of two pronouns, the two pronouns combined are attached to the gerund form. The pronoun in the dative comes first: *dându-mi-l* giving it to me, *părându-ți-se* as it seemed to you, etc. The combination gerund + the two pronouns form one phonetic word with one stress. Hyphenation is required.

The negative is formed with the negative element *ne-* attached to the gerund in pre-position (the negation and the gerund form merge) : *lucrând – nelucrând* not working, *văzând – nevăzând* not seeing, *scriind – nescriind* not writing, *gândindu-mă – negândindu-mă* not thinking. The adverb *mai* can be inserted between the negative component *ne-* and the actual gerund form of the verb : *nevăzând – nemaivăzând* not seeing anymore, *neauzind – nemaiauzind* not hearing anymore, *neștiind – nemaștiind* not knowing anymore, *negândindu-mă – nemaigândindu-mă* not thinking anymore.

4.3.3.2. Usage of the gerund

The gerund is, as a rule, used as a supplemental predicative element or as a complement of circumstance indicating manner, time, cause, etc. It corresponds in general to the present participle or the gerund in English:

L-am găsit lucrând. I found him working. (supplemental predicative element)

Ne explică gerunziul scriind totul pe tablă. He / she is explaining the gerund writing on everything the blackboard. (modality)

Nesimițindu-mă bine am decis să rămân acasă. Feeling sick I decided to stay home. (cause : *nesimițindu-mă bine = pentru că nu m-am simțit bine*)

Exersând constant o să ajungi să cânti la pian destul de bine. By practicing constantly you'll get to play the piano pretty well. (condition : *exersând = dacă vei exersa*)

Plecând, ne-a făcut cu mâna. She waved bye-bye while leaving. (temporality, momentaneous action : *plecând = când a plecat*)

Uite cum zâmbește citind scrisoarea de la el. Look at her how she's smiling while reading his letter. (temporality, continuing action : *citind = în timp ce citește*)

The gerund can be used as an attribute (rarely), and it can agree to the noun :

Mi-a întins o mână tremurândă. He offered me a shaking hand.

The gerund is used after verbs of perception :

Am văzut-o trecând pe lângă mine, dar ea nu m-a văzut pe mine. I saw her passing by, but she didn't see me.

In Romanian the gerund is never preceded by a preposition. The subjects of the main verb and of the gerund are, in general, the same, but the two verbs can also have different subjects :

Ieșind din clădire mi-am dat seama că am uitat lucrările studenților în birou. Leaving the building I realized I had left my student's papers in my office. (same subject)

Te-am văzut (pe tine) ieșind din clădire. I saw you leaving the building. (different subjects)

4.3.4. The supine

The supine is identical in form to the past participle, but is always preceded by a preposition.

The supine names the verbal action, acting as a noun, but without losing its verbal semantic features. If the past participle can function and is perceived as an adjective, the supine is perceived as a noun. Its English equivalent is the infinitive or the **-ing** form.

E greu de crezut că ea vorbește chineza. It is hard to believe that she speaks Chinese.

M-am apucat de făcut curățenie în casă. I started cleaning the house.

The supine is mostly used with the preposition **de**, after the verbs **a fi** and **a avea**, to indicate an obligation or an anticipated action :

Am de lucrat mult. I have to work a lot.

Aici e de câștigat un premiu. There is a prize to be won here.

The supine is also used in other structures and with other prepositions :

- verb (**a termina de** to finish doing smth, **a se apuca de** to start doing smth, **a se pune pe** to start doing smth, very intensely, **a se pregăti de** to prepare to, **a fi în stare de** to be able to, **a se sătura de** to be sick of, etc.) + supine :

S-a apucat finalmente de lucrat. He finally started working.

- adjectives or adverbs + supine :

Carnea e bună de mâncat. The meat is good to eat.

- supine with a repeated or implied verb :

De înțeles, înțeleg românește, dar de vorbit, nu. I do understand Romanian, but I can't speak.

- noun + supine indicating the purpose of the noun : *mașină de scris* typewriter, *mașină de spălat* washer, *fier de călcat* iron, *aparat de fotografiat* camera, *ochelari de citit* reading glasses, etc.

- noun + supine in the negative with modal meaning : *o vacanță de neuitat* an unforgettable holiday = *care nu poate fi uitată*, *o greșeală de neiertat* an unforgivable mistake = *care nu poate fi iertată*, etc.

4.4. Voice

4.4.1. Reflexive voice

4.4.1.1. Reflexive verbs

Some Romanian verbs include in their structure a reflexive pronoun (see subsection 3.4.3.), when the subject of these verbs and their object (direct or indirect) are the same, i.e. the action is oriented back to its subject. These verbs are reflexive verbs. There are two sets of reflexive pronouns, one in the accusative, and one in the dative :

		accusative		
		1 st person	2 nd person	3 rd person
singular	mă, -mă, m-, -m-	te, -te, te-, -te-	se, -se, s-, -s-	
plural	ne, -ne, ne-, -ne-	vă, -vă, v-, -v-		
		dative		
		1 st person	2 nd person	3 rd person
singular	îmi, -mi, mi-, -mi-	îți, -ți, ți-, -ți-	își, -și, și-, -și-	
plural	ne, -ne, ne-, ni, ni-	vă, -vă, v-, vi, vi-, -vi-		

- the 1st and the 2nd persons of the reflexive pronouns are identical to the short unstressed forms of the personal pronoun in the accusative or dative
- the 3rd person is different
- there is one form for the accusative singular and plural, masculine and feminine (**se**), and one form for dative singular and plural, masculine and feminine (**își**)

Reflexive verbs conjugate like active verbs, but their forms are preceded in all persons by the reflexive pronouns. In the negative, the negation **nu** is placed before the reflexive pronoun.

Romanian reflexive verbs fall into several groups:

There are verbs that, used with the reflexive pronoun, just indicate the fact that the action is oriented towards the subject who performs it – its results are meant to affect the subject: **a se bucura** to feel glad, happy, **a se distra** to have a good time, **a se gândi** to think, **a se îmbăta** to get drunk, **a se mira** to be amazed, intrigued, to wonder, **a se odihni** to rest, **a se așeza** to sit down, **a se ridica** to stand up, **a se îmbrăca** to dress, to put clothes on, **a se dezbrăca** to undress, to take clothes off, **a se culca** to go to sleep, to lay down, **a se scula** to wake up, to stand up, **a se trezi** to wake up, **a se spăla** to wash oneself, **a se pieptăna** to brush oneself's hair; **a-și aminti** to remember, **a-și dori** to wish for oneself, **a-și imagina** to imagine, **a-și închipui** to imagine, **a-și reveni** to come to one's senses, **a-și cumpăra** to buy to oneself, **a-și face** to make, to do for oneself, etc.

Some of the reflexive verbs have a reciprocal meaning, i.e. there are two logical subjects and the action of each one is oriented towards the other one: **a se bate** to fight, **a se certa** to fight, to argue, to quarrel, **a se cunoaște** to know each other, **a se iubi** to love each other, **a se întâlni** to meet, to see each other, to date, **a se împrieteni** to become friends, **a se înțelege** to understand each other, to have a good relationship, **a se saluta** to greet each other, **a se vedea** to see each other; **a-și dărui** to give each other gifts, **a-și împărtăși** to share thoughts, ideas, **a-și povesti** to tell each other many things, etc.

Other reflexive verbs have a passive meaning : **a se construi** to be built, **a se vinde** to be sold, etc., or an impersonal meaning : **se spune** people say, **nu se aude** it's impossible to hear, etc.

4.4.1.2. Semantic identity / non-identity of homonym verbs in the active and reflexive voice

Numerous Romanian verbs can function both as active and reflexive verbs. In general their basic lexical meaning is the same, the only difference being the orientation, the object on which the action is performed towards : ***a spăla ceva*** to wash something – ***a se spăla*** to wash oneself, ***a îmbrăca pe cineva***, ***ceva*** do dress somebody, to put, to wear something – ***a se îmbrăca*** to dress oneself, ***a întâlni pe cineva*** to meet somebody – ***a se întâlni cu cineva*** to meet (reciprocally, action shared by both sides), ***a vinde ceva*** to sell something – ***a se vinde*** to sell oneself to, to be sold, ***a spune*** to say, to tell – ***a-și spune*** to tell, to say to yourself – ***a se spune*** to be told (impers.), etc.

Ieri ați spălat și rufe, și vase. You did laundry and also washed dishes yesterday.

— ***V-ați spălat? Sunteți gata de culcare?*** Did you wash? Are you ready to go to bed?

Bunica l-a îmbrăcat gros pe Andrei, e frig afară. Grandmother dressed Andrei warmly, it is cold outside.

S-a îmbrăcat prea gros și acum îi e cald. He dressed too warmly and now he is warm.

L-au întâlnit ieri pe fostul lor profesor de biologie din liceu. They met (ran into) their biology teacher from high school yesterday.

— ***Unde s-au întâlnit, pe stradă sau în parc?*** Where did they meet, on the street or in the park?

— ***Am spus tot ce știm, nu știm nimic altceva!*** We said all we know, we don't know anything else.

Stăm de vorbă de atâtea ore și tot am impresia că nu ne-am spus tot! We have been talking for so many hours, and I still feel we haven't told each other everything.

A certain number of verbs can function only as reflexive verbs, they do not have an active correlative : ***a se baza pe ceva***, ***pe cineva*** to count on, to rely on, ***a se căi*** to repent, ***a se răzgândi*** to change your mind, ***a se sfi*** to be / behave shy, ***a se teme de ceva***, ***de cineva*** to be afraid, ***a se lamenta*** to lament, etc.

Pe ce te bazezi când vorbești așa? What reason do you have to say such things?

Ciudat este că acest ins, care a ucis doi oameni, nu se căiește! What's weird is that this guy, who killed two people, does not repent.

Nu pot avea încredere în el, e un om minunat, dar se răzgândește foarte des ! I can't trust him, he's a wonderful person, but he changes his mind really often.

Nu mă tem de nimeni și de nimic ! I am not afraid of anybody or anything.

Sometimes the meaning of the active verb and the meaning of its reflexive correlative are different : ***a afla*** to find out – ***a se afla*** to be, ***a uita*** to forget – ***a se uita*** to look, to watch, ***a găti*** to cook – ***a se găti*** to dress up (iron.) :

— ***Maria a gătit în seara asta pentru noi toți.*** Maria cooked for all of us tonight.

— ***Și de ce s-a gătit așa?*** Then why did she dress up?

4.4.2. Passive voice

The passive voice is used in Romanian, as in English, when the speaker / listener is more interested in the action itself than in the agent, or when the doer of the action is not known. Any sentence with a transitive verb as a predicate can be transformed into a passive sentence with the former direct object becoming the subject. There are two mechanisms of turning the active voice into passive in Romanian:

The transitive verb is replaced by the corresponding form (mood and tense) of the verb ***a fi*** + **the past participle of the actual verb**. The past participle takes the gender and the number of the new grammatical subject. The former subject may appear as a construction ***de*** + **noun (pronoun)** / ***de către*** + **noun (pronoun)**, but its presence is not required:

Anul acesta UNESCO organizează conferința la București. UNESCO organizes the conference in Bucharest this year.

↔ ***Anul acesta conferința este organizată de UNESCO la București.*** This conference is organized by UNESCO in Bucharest.

Toți studenții au citit toate materialele. All the students read all the materials. ↔ **Toate materialele au fost citite de către toți studenții.** All the materials were read by all the students.

Ei vor pune cărțile la loc. They will put the books back. ↔ **Cărțile vor fi puse la loc.** The books will be put back.

Organizatorii conferinței ar fi putut prezenta filmul în timpul sesiunii de dimineață. The organizers of the conference could have presented the film during the morning session. ↔ **Filmul ar fi putut fi prezentat de organizatorii conferinței în timpul sesiunii de dimineață.** The film could have been presented by the organizers of the conference during the morning session.

Many verbs can form the passive by using the reflexive pronoun *se* and the 3rd person of the verb, in which case the passive has an impersonal meaning:

Ei vor organiza conferința la București. They will organize the conference in Bucharest. ↔ **Conferința se va organiza la București.** The conference will be organized in Bucharest.

4.5. Impersonal and unipersonal verbs

Some verbs, active or reflexive, used in the 3rd person singular (many of them do not have forms for other persons), carry an impersonal meaning. These are:

- verbs designating meteorological phenomena: ***a ploua*** (3rd singular only) to rain, ***a fulgera*** verb used to indicate the lightning, ***a tuna*** to thunder, ***a ninge*** (3rd singular only) to snow, ***a se înnora*** to get cloudy, ***a se însenina*** to clear up (about the sky)
- verbs indicating changes in the moment of the day: ***a se lumina*** to grow light (about the day), ***a se întuneca*** to get dark, ***a se însera*** to get dark
- verbs indicating the idea of permission, customary, casual: ***a se cuveni*** to be decent, accepted by society (about an action, a certain behaviour), ***a se cădea*** to be decent, accepted by society (about an action, a certain behaviour), ***a se întâmpla*** to happen, and the verb ***a se putea*** to be possible, to be allowed
- impersonal reflexive constructions with verbs *dicendi*, such as: ***se vorbește că*** people say that, ***se spune că*** people say that, ***se zvonește că*** there are rumors that
- the constructions ***se vede că*** it seems that, apparently, probably, ***se pare că*** it seems that
- other active verbs that preceded by the reflexive pronoun in the 3rd person get impersonal meaning:

În acest restaurant se mănâncă bine. You can eat well in this restaurant.

Atenție, mâine se pleacă foarte devreme! Attention everybody, the departure tomorrow will be an early one.

Diseară se stă până târziu la școală. People will stay late at school tonight.

Some verbs can be used in impersonal constructions with the personal pronoun in the the dative, in which they can appear in the 3rd person singular or plural. These structures are presented within subsection 3.4.7.4.

5. ADVERB

5.1. Identifying and forming adverbs

Adverbs are invariable parts of speech that can accompany and modify verbs, adjectives or other adverbs:

Repetăm toate adverbele astăzi (modifying a verb), ***deși suntem puțin obosiți*** (modifying an adjective), ***însă putem face asta numai acum*** (modifying an adverb). We repeat all the adverbs today, although we are a little tired, but it's only now that we can do this.

There are basic or primary adverbs in Romanian : ***unde*** where, ***aici*** here, ***acolo*** there, ***acum*** now, ***atunci*** then, ***cum*** how, ***așa*** so, such, like that, ***bine*** good, ***rău*** bad, etc.

Many adverbs are identical to the masculine singular of the adjectives with the same lexical meaning:

A prezentat un material clar și bine structurat. (adj.) He presented a clear and well structured material. – ***El vorbește clar.*** He speaks clearly. (adv.)

Aș aprecia un răspuns sincer. (adj.) I would appreciate an honest answer. – ***Răspunde-mi sincer!*** Answer honestly! (adv.)

A specific adverbial suffix is ***-ește***. In order to form adverbs, this suffix is added to nouns designating human beings: ***bărbat*** man – ***bărbătește***, ***copil*** child – ***copilărește***, ***frate*** brother – ***frățeste***, ***om*** human being – ***omenește***, ***român*** Romanian – ***românește***, ***rus*** Russian – ***rusește***, ***englez*** Englishman – ***englezește***, ***chinez*** Chinese – ***chinezește***, etc.

The prefix ***ori-*** or the suffix ***-va***, added to the basic interrogative adverbs ***unde*** where, ***când*** when, ***cum*** how, ***cât*** how much form the indefinite adverbs: ***undeva*** somewhere, ***cândva*** ever, once, a certain time ago, in a certain time, ***cumva*** somehow, ***câtva*** a little, ***oriunde*** anywhere, ***oricând*** any time, ***oricum*** anyhow, ***oricât*** no matter how much. The prefix ***alt-*** added to the indefinite adverbs with ***-va*** form adverbs of differentiation: ***altundeva*** somewhere else, ***altcândva*** some other time, ***altcumva*** in a different way.

Some adverbs can form diminutives with the suffixes ***-el***, ***-or*** or ***-șor***: ***ușor*** easily, lightly – ***ușurel***, ***repede*** quickly, fast – ***repejor***, ***bine*** well, good – ***binișor***, ***mult*** much – ***multișor***, ***departe*** far – ***depărțișor***.

5.2. Adverbs with specific morphological functions

Adverbs can play a morphological role. The adverbs ***mai*** more, ***puțin*** less, ***foarte*** very are structural elements of the comparative and superlative degrees of the adjectives and of the adverbs: ***mai frumos*** more beautifully, ***mai puțin frumos*** less beautifully, ***mai bine*** better, ***cel mai interesant*** the most interesting way, ***extrem de repede*** extremely quickly, ***foarte concis*** very concisely, etc. (see subsections 3.3.4. and 5.6.)

There is a series of short adverbs indicating a certain modality of performing the action or even adding aspectual values to the verb: ***mai*** (repetition, continuity), ***și*** (addition), ***tot*** (continuity), ***nu prea*** (low intensity). As a rule these adverbs are placed before the actual verb. Accordingly, when used with verbal forms without auxiliaries they just precede the verbal form. When combined with negated verbal forms, these adverbs will come after the negation ***nu***. When used with verbal forms with auxiliaries they will be inserted between the auxiliary and the actual verb.

A tot insistă devine neplăcut. It's becoming unpleasant to keep insisting.

Pentru a nu mai pierde timpul, fă ceva! For not wasting your time anymore, do something!

Eu tot muncesc, dar degeaba. I keep working, but it's useless.

Nu prea știi formele verbale! You don't really know the verbal forms!

Am mai fost aici. I have already been here.

Ne-am tot văzut în ultima vreme. We kept seeing each other lately.

Vreau să mai citesc puțin. I would like to keep reading for a while.

Aș tot dormi. I would just keep sleeping.

Nu ne-am tot pune problema aceasta, dacă lucrurile ar sta altfel. We would not be concerned by this problem if things were different.

Some of these adverbs, mainly *mai*, can be embedded in the negative past participle or gerund verbal forms: *nemaivăzut* unseen before, *nemaiauzit* never heard, *nemaiputând* not being able to anymore, *nemaștiind* not knowing anymore, etc.

5.3. Interrogative / relative adverbs

The interrogative adverbs are : *unde* where, *când* when, *cum* how and *cât* how much :

- *Unde mergi?* Where are you going?
- *Când pleci?* When are you leaving?
- *Cum ai dormit?* How did you sleep?
- *Cât poate să muncească?* How much can she work?

The same adverbs can act as relative adverbs, in which capacity they will play a syntactic role – they connect the main clause and the subordinate in a complex sentence:

Biletele și hărțile sunt unde le-ai pus. The tickets and the maps are where you put them.

A venit când a putut. He came when he could come.

Vorbesc cu el nemțește cum pot. I speak German with him the way I can speak.

Muncește cât poate. She works as much as she can.

These adverbs can form correlative pairs with other adverbs: *atunci când* when, *acolo unde* where, *așa cum* as, like, *atât cât* as much as:

Biletele și hărțile sunt acolo unde le-ai pus. The tickets and the maps are where you put them.

A venit atunci când a putut. He came when he could come.

Vorbesc cu el nemțește așa cum pot. I speak German with him the way I can speak.

Muncește atât cât poate. She works as much as she can.

5.4. Adverbial structures and phrases

Adverbs can be preceded by prepositions: *de acasă* from home, *până acasă* to my, your, etc. place, *pe acasă* around my, your, etc. place, *pentru acasă* for home, to go, *de aici* from here, located here, *până aici* to here, *pe aici* somewhere here, *pentru aici* for here, *de jos* from downstairs, located downstairs, *până jos* to downstairs, *de sus* from upstairs, *până sus* to upstairs:

- *Vii de acasă?* Are you coming from home?
- Mă simt ca acasă.* I feel like being at home.
- *Mă duc până acasă.* I'll go home (and I'll be back).
- *Mai stai și tu pe acasă!* Spend some time at home!
- *Nu avem teme pentru acasă.* We don't have any homework to do.
- *Adu tu, te rog, niște scaune de sus.* Please bring some chairs from upstairs.
- *Du-te până jos și adu o sticlă de vin.* Go downstairs and bring a bottle of wine.

The adverbial phrases are numerous, and they lack an adverb in their structure. Their meaning and function, as well as the fact that they can be replaced with adverbs in discourse, are reasons why these phrases are considered adverbial collocations:

- **prep. + noun (+ adjective):** *fără îndoială ~ indubitabil, neîndoielnic* without any doubts, certainly; *cu siguranță ~ sigur* definitely; *de bună seamă ~ sigur* definitely
- **prep. + pronoun:** *cu totul ~ complet, totalmente* completely, totally
- **prep. + adj.:** *din nou ~ iarăși* again
- **prep. + supine of the verb:** *de ajuns ~ suficient* enough

- **pron. + verb + adv.:** *cine știe unde ~ undeva* somewhere; *cine știe când ~ cândva* some time ago, some time in the future
- **adj. + prep.:** *extrem de ~ foarte* extremely; *nemaipomenit de ~ foarte* very
- **repeated words:** *zi de zi ~ zilnic* every day; *când și când, din când în când ~ uneori* from time to time; *păș-păș ~ ușurel, încetîșor* slowly, quietly

5.5. Semantic groups of adverbs

By their meaning, adverbs and adverbial phrases can indicate:

- place: *acasă* at home, *acolo* over there, *afară* outside, *aici* here, *apoi* then, after, *aproape* close, in the vicinity, *deasupra* above, *departe* far, *dincolo* in the other room, *înainte* forward, *înapoi* backward, *înăuntru* inside, *jos* down, downstairs, *pretutindeni* everywhere, *sus* up, upstairs, *unde* where, *undeva* somewhere, *cine știe unde* somewhere, *la dracu-n praznic* very far away, *peste tot* everywhere, etc.
- time: *acum* now, *alaltăieri* the day before yesterday, *aseară* last night, *astăzi* today, *atunci* then, *când* when, *cândva* ever, once, *câteodată* sometimes, *curând* soon, *demult* a long time ago, *deocamdată* for the time being, *devereme* early, *dimineața* in the morning, *iarna* in winter, *ieri* yesterday, *imediat* immediately, right away, *îndată* immediately, right away, *mâine* tomorrow, *noaptea* at night, *poimâine* the day after tomorrow, *seara* in the evening, *târziu* late, *(în)totdeauna* always, *ziua* during the day, *din când în când* from time to time, *zi de zi* every day, etc.
- manner: *așa* so, like that, this way, *altfel* otherwise, *bine* well, good, *degeaba* for free, for no reason, in vain, *cum* how, *împreună* together, *încet* slowly, *repede* quickly, *separat* separately, *pe neașteptate* unexpectedly, *pe de rost* by heart, *românește* in Romanian, *turcește* in Turkish, etc.
- quantity: *atât(a)* that much, *cât* how much, *destul* enough, *mult* a lot, *imens* immensely, *puțin* a little, *cât de cât* slightly
- affirmation: *da* yes, *ba da* yes, *desigur* certainly, *firește* naturally, *negreșit* sure thing, *cu siguranță* definitely, *de bună seamă* definitely
- negation: *deloc* no, not at all, *nicăieri* nowhere, any place, *nici* neither, *nicicum* no way, *nicidecum* certainly not, *niciunde* nowhere, *niciodată* never, *nicicând* never, *nu* no, *când o face plopul pere* never
- reinforcement: *chiar* really, even, just *tocmai* just
- restriction: *cel puțin* at least, *măcar* at least, *decât* just, only, *doar* just, only, *numai* just, only
- modality: *probabil* maybe, *poate* maybe, *posibil* possible, *eventual* maybe, *oare* I wonder if

5.6. Degrees of comparison of the adverbs

5.6.1. The comparative degree

Adverbs use the same mechanism as the adjectives to form degrees of comparison.

5.6.1.1. The comparative of superiority

<i>mai + adverb + decât / ca + accusative</i>
<i>Tu ai răspuns mai bine decât / ca mine.</i> You answered better than I did.

- the comparative of superiority is formed with the invariable adverb *mai* preceding the actual adverb, and with the comparative prepositions *decât* or *ca*; *ca* is more frequent than *decât* in colloquial speech
- nouns and pronouns after *decât* or *ca* are in the accusative case
- the comparative adverb *mai* can be reinforced by other adverbs, such as *mult*, *cu mult*, *incomparabil*, *infinit*:
El vorbește mult mai bine ca mine englezește. He speaks English much better than I do.

5.6.1.2. The comparative of equality

tot așa de / tot atât de / la fel de + adverb + ca / ca și + accusative

Tu ai răspuns tot așa de repede ca / ca și mine. You answered as quickly as I did.

- the comparative of equality is formed with the invariable adverbial structures *tot așa de / tot atât de / la fel de* preceding the actual adverb, and with the comparative prepositions *ca* or *ca și*
- nouns and pronouns after *ca* or *ca și* are in the accusative case

5.6.1.3. The comparative of inferiority

mai puțin + adverb + decât / ca + accusative

Tu ai răspuns mai puțin bine decât / ca mine. You answered less well than I did.

- the comparative of inferiority is formed with the invariable adverbial structure *mai puțin* preceding the actual adverb, and with the comparative prepositions *decât* or *ca*
- *ca* is more frequent than *decât* in colloquial speech
- nouns and pronouns after *decât* or *ca* are in the accusative case

5.6.2. The superlative degree

5.6.2.1. The superlative relative of superiority

cel mai + adverb [+ dintre ; din]

El scrie cel mai bine. His writing is the best.

El scrie cel mai bine dintre toți. He writes better than everyone else.

- the adverbs form the superlative relative of superiority with the invariable structure *cel mai* preceding the adverb
- the whole superlative structure can be followed by the restrictive construction *din + noun / pronoun in the singular* or *dintre + noun / pronoun in the plural*

5.6.2.2. The superlative relative of inferiority

cel mai puțin + adverb [+ dintre ; din]

El scrie cel mai puțin bine. His writing is the least good.

El scrie cel mai puțin bine dintre toți. His writing is the least good compared to everybody else's.

- the adverbs form the superlative relative of superiority with the invariable structure *cel mai puțin* preceding the adverb
- the whole superlative structure can be followed by the restrictive construction *din + noun / pronoun in the singular* or *dintre + noun / pronoun in the plural*

5.6.2.3. The superlative absolute

foarte / tare / extrem de / cât se poate de + adverb

Studentii scriu foarte bine. My students write very well.

Ea cântă tare bine. She sings really good.

- the standard adverb used to form the superlative absolute is *foarte*
- the other adverbs or adverbial constructions are emotionally marked
- the adverb *tare* is used in the colloquial style, and it also have an emotional value

5.6.3. Adverbs that do not form degrees of comparison

Some adverbs do not have degrees of comparison: *superior* superior, *inferior* inferior, *major* major, *minor* minor, *anterior* previous, *ulterior* ulterior, *optim* optimal, *ultim* last, ultimate, *suprem* supreme, *perfect* perfect, *desăvârșit* perfect, *asemenea* alike, *unic* unique, etc.

6. PREPOSITIONS

6.1. Basic features of the prepositions

Although Romanian is an inflected language, prepositions play a major role in creating relations between words in the sentence. The preposition, an invariable part of speech, functions as a grammatical instrument, an element of relation. It can precede nominals, but also adverbs and some verbal forms (the infinitive, the supine).

- *Am discutat **despre** asta **cu** prietenii mei.* I talked about this with my friends. (dem. pron., noun + possessive adj.)
- *Vreau să vorbesc **cu** tine.* I want to speak with you. (pers. pron.)
- *Te rog să iei ceva de mâncare **pentru** diseară.* Could you buy something to eat for tonight, please? (adv.)
- *Încep **prin** a vă prezenta proiectul nostru.* I will start by presenting our project. (verb, infinitive)
- *Poți folosi mașina **de** spălat oricând dorești.* You can use the washer whenever you want to. (verb, supine)

There are basic prepositions (*a* of, *cu* with, *de* of, *pe* on, *la* at, *în* in, *lângă* next to, *pentru* for, *sub* under, *peste* over, *fără* without, *prin* through, etc.), compound prepositions, formed of two or three basic prepositions (*de la* from, at, *de pe* on, *de pe la* from, *de lângă* next to, *pe lângă* by, *pe după* behind, etc.), and prepositional phrases, formed of preposition plus noun (*în fața* in front of, *în spatele* behind, *în privința* regarding, *pe dedesubtul* under, etc.) in Romanian.

In contrast with phrasal verbs in English, Romanian verbs do not change their meaning if followed by different prepositions. However, some Romanian verbs require certain prepositions and cases. Note that the prepositions required by equivalent verbs are not necessarily identical in the two languages:

- *a amenința **pe** cineva **cu** ceva – to threaten sb with something* (same preposition)
- *a se căsători **cu** cineva – to marry somebody* (no preposition in English),
- *a înmulți **cât** **cu** **cât** – to multiply something by something* (different prepositions)

6.2. Prepositions and cases

Certain prepositions followed by nominal elements can require a particular case.

6.2.1. Prepositions that require the accusative

There is a preposition in Romanian, *pe*, that can function only as a marker of the accusative / direct object, i.e. it does not have a lexical meaning. The usage of *pe* with the nouns and pronouns accusative is described in subsections 3.1.3.2. and 3.4.9.

There are many lexical prepositions that function with the accusative case:

către towards, to: — *Nu veni către mine!* Don't come to me!

cu with, to: — *Vorbește cu mine!* Talk to me!

de of: *Am nevoie de un manual de română.* I need a Romanian textbook.

din from, out of: *Ea este din Germania.* She is from Germany.

dinspre from: *Bate vântul dinspre nord.* The wind is blowing from the North.

drept as: — *Nu vreau să mă folosești pe mine drept scut în acest conflict.* I don't want you to use me as a shield in this conflict.

fără without: — *Nu merg acolo fără tine.* I'm not going over there without you.

în afară de except: — *Mai vine cineva diseară în afară de noi?* Is there anyone else but us coming tonight?

în chip de as: *În chip de introducere voi folosi acest paragraf.* I will use this paragraph as an introduction.

în in: *Creioanele sunt în sertar.* The pencils are in the drawer.

în loc de instead of: — *Vreau orez în loc de legume.* I want rice instead of vegetables.

în timp de in times of, in an interval of: *În timp de război oamenii suferă.* People suffer in times of war.
înainte de before: *Vreau să ne vedem înainte de plecarea mea.* I want to see you before I leave.
la at, in: *Tu predai la Universitatea Duke?* Do you teach at Duke University?
lângă next to, near, close to: *Magazinul e chiar lângă casă.* The store is next to the house.
legat de in connection with, related to, regarding: *Legat de primul paragraf din document, am niște sugestii.* I have some suggestions related to the first paragraph of the document.
pe lângă close to, around, by: *Îmi place să stau pe lângă casă.* I like to be around the house.
pentru for: *Florile sunt pentru profesoara noastră.* The flowers are for our teacher.
peste over: — *Nu sări peste scaun!* Don't jump over the chair!
spre towards, to: *Avionul se îndreaptă spre terminal.* The plane is going towards the terminal building.
sub under: *Pisica e sub masă.* The cat is under the table.

6.2.2. Prepositions that require the genitive

The genitive case is required by such prepositions, as:

asupra about, regarding: *Discuția asupra metodelor de evaluare a durat două ore.* The discussion regarding the evaluation methods lasted for 2 hours.
contra against: *Argumentele contra poziției mele nu au fost convingătoare.* The arguments against my position were not convincing.
cu ocazia on, for (an event): — *Cu ocazia Crăciunului vă dorim fericire și sănătate!* We wish you happiness and health on the occasion of this Christmas.
de la începutul in the beginning: *Sonata de la începutul recitalului a fost plicticoasă.* The sonata in the beginning of the recital was boring.
de la mijlocul in the middle: *Scena de la mijlocul actului întâi m-a impresionat.* The scene in the middle of the 1st act impressed me.
de la sfârșitul in the end: *Liedul de la sfârșitul recitalului a fost minunat.* The song at the end of the recital was wonderful.
de-a latul across: — *De ce stai așa, de-a latul patului?* Why are you laying like this, across the bed ?
de-a lungul along: — *Am mers de-a lungul râului.* We walked along the river.
deasupra / pe deasupra over: *Zborul deasupra (pe deasupra) oceanului este fascinant.* The flight over the ocean is fascinating.
din cauza because of: *A pierdut totul din cauza propriei iresponsabilități.* He lost everything because of his own irresponsibility.
din cursul during, in: *Cearta din cursul serii m-a întristat.* The fight we had in the evening made me feel sad.
din fața in front of: — *Tânărul din fața doamnei Popa este fiul ei?* The young man in front Mrs. Popa is her son ?
din fruntea who is a leader of: *Politicianul din fruntea partidului este foarte tânăr!* The politician who leads the party is very young.
din jurul around: *Gardul din jurul grădinii nu e prea înalt.* The fence around the garden is not too high.
din mijlocul in the middle: *Statuia din mijlocul parcului este teribil de urâtă!* The statue in the middle of the park is terribly ugly.
din spatele behind: — *Cred că îl cunosc pe tipul din spatele Mariei.* I think I know the young man behind Maria.
din timpul during: *Discuțiile din timpul seminariilor sunt plicticoase.* The discussions during seminars are boring.
împrejurul around: *Nu este decât pădure împrejurul caselor, altceva nimic.* There is nothing but forest around the houses.
în cursul in, during: — *În cursul discuției ați omis un argument important!* You have omitted an important argument during the discussion!
în decursul along , in, during: *În decursul anilor am învățat engleza destul de bine.* I've learned English fairly well throughout the years.
în fața in front of: — *Suntem în fața Ateneului Român.* We are in front of the Romanian Atheneum.
în fruntea as a leader: — *Pe cine au ales în fruntea partidului?* Whom did they choose as the leader of the party?
în jurul around: *Am dat ture vreo 10 minute în jurul statuii până au venit și ei.* We walked around the statue until they arrived.
în locul instead: *Profesorul Popovici a vorbit în locul profesorului Berg.* Professor Popovici delivered his lecture in place of professor Berg.

- în mijlocul** in the middle: — *De ce stai în mijlocul străzii – e periculos!* Why are you standing in the middle of the street ?
It's dangerous !
- în numele** on behalf of: — *Iau cuvântul în numele colegilor mei.* I am speaking on behalf of my colleagues.
- în privința** regarding, related to: — *Stai liniștit în privința banilor: totul va fi bine.* Don't worry about money, everything will be fine.
- în spatele** behind: — *Anton e tânărul care stă în spatele Mariei.* Anton is the young man who is standing behind Maria.
- în timpul** during: *Tinerii aceia au vorbit încontinuu între ei în timpul conferinței.* Those young people kept talking amongst themselves during the conference.
- în urma** after, as a consequence of: *În urma discuției am decis: rămân în București.* After the discussion I made up my mind : I will stay in Bucharest.
- în vederea** for, to: *Am făcut diverse lucruri utile în vederea plecării.* I did many useful things preparing for the departure.
- înaintea / dinaintea / de dinaintea** before: *E liniștea dinaintea furtunii.* This is the calm before the storm.
- înapoia / dinapoia / de dinapoia** behind: *Curtea dinapoia casei e mică.* The yard behind the house is small.
- la începutul** at the beginning: *La începutul recitalului nu a cântat prea bine.* He did not play too well at the beginning of the recital.
- la mijlocul** at the middle: *Am găsit informația necesară abia la mijlocul articolului.* I found the necessary piece of information only at the middle of the article.
- la sfârșitul** at the end: *A cântat superb la sfârșitul recitalului.* She sang beautifully at the end of the recital.
- pe dinafara** out of: *Pare bine informat, însă este total pe dinafara problemelor.* He seems well informed, but in reality he is out of picture.
- pe dinăuntru** inside: *Pe dinăuntru sufletului meu sunt cam tristă.* Deep inside I am pretty sad.

6.2.3. Prepositions that require the dative

The dative case is required by three prepositions with the general meaning 'thanks to':

- datorită:** *Am obținut aceste rezultate datorită ajutorului tău.* I got these results thanks to your help.
- grație:** *Am ajuns acasa mai devreme grație bunăvoinței dumneavoastră.* I got home earlier thanks to your kindness.
- mulțumită:** *Mulțumită eforturilor voastre am ocupat locul întâi.* We won the first place thanks to your efforts.

6.3. Semantic structures with prepositions

6.3.1. Various relations created with prepositions

The prepositions are used to build structures that indicate:

- | | |
|-------------|--|
| place: | <i>în</i> in, <i>pe</i> on, <i>la</i> at, <i>din</i> from, <i>de pe</i> from, on, <i>de la</i> from, at, <i>sub</i> under, <i>după</i> behind, after, <i>lângă</i> close to, <i>peste</i> over, <i>deasupra</i> over, <i>în spatele</i> = <i>în urma</i> = <i>înapoia</i> behind, <i>în fața</i> in front of, <i>înăuntru</i> inside, <i>spre</i> = <i>înspre</i> = <i>către</i> towards, <i>dinspre</i> from, <i>pe la</i> at |
| time: | <i>la</i> at, <i>în</i> in, <i>pe la</i> around, <i>de</i> since, <i>după</i> after, <i>înainte de</i> before, <i>înaintea</i> before, <i>în timpul</i> during, <i>în cursul</i> during, <i>în timp de</i> in, <i>în curs de</i> in, <i>în jur de</i> around |
| manner: | <i>cu</i> with, <i>fără</i> without, <i>a</i> of, <i>la</i> at, <i>pe</i> by, <i>drept</i> as, <i>ca</i> as, like, <i>prin</i> through, <i>sub formă de</i> in the form of, <i>în chip de</i> as, <i>în loc de</i> instead |
| condition: | <i>cu condiția</i> with the condition of |
| cause: | <i>din cauza</i> because of, <i>din pricina</i> due to, <i>datorită</i> thanks to, <i>mulțumită</i> thanks to, <i>grație</i> thanks to, <i>de</i> because of, <i>din</i> because of |
| concession: | <i>în ciuda</i> despite, in spite of, <i>în pofida</i> despite, in spite of |
| purpose: | <i>pentru</i> for, <i>spre</i> for, <i>în scopul</i> with the purpose of, <i>în vederea</i> for |
| relation: | <i>relativ la</i> related to, regarding, <i>legat de</i> with respect to, regarding, <i>în raport cu</i> related to, regarding, <i>cu privire la</i> regarding |

exception:	<i>în afară de</i> besides, except, <i>fără</i> without, <i>cu excepția</i> with the exception of
addition:	<i>pe lângă</i> plus, <i>în afară de</i> besides, <i>în afara</i> besides
instrument:	<i>cu</i> with, by, <i>la</i> at, by, <i>prin</i> through, <i>prin intermediul</i> through, <i>prin bunăvoința</i> care of, <i>datorită</i> thanks to, <i>mulțumită</i> thanks to, <i>grație</i> thanks to
association:	<i>cu</i> with, <i>împreună cu</i> together with, <i>la un loc cu</i> with, together with, <i>laolaltă cu</i> together with

6.3.2. The usage of prepositions in structures indicating time and space

The prepositions indicating time and space relations function both in circumstantial and attributive constructions. When simple prepositions like *la* at, *pe* on, *sub* under, *după* behind, *lângă* next ; *după* after, *dinaintea* before, *în timpul* during are preceded by the preposition *de*, new compound preposition with the same lexical meaning are formed : *de la* at, *de pe* on, *de sub* under, *de după* behind, *de lângă* next to ; *de după* after, *de dinaintea* before, *din timpul*. These prepositions precede nouns having attributive function. The structure is the equivalent of an attributive subordinate showing place or time: *casa de la țară* the village house = *casa care este la țară* the house that is in the village, *cartea de pe masă* the book on the table = *cartea care este pe masă* the book which is on the table, *câinele de sub scaun* the dog under the chair = *câinele care este sub scaun* the dog that is under the chair, *ședința de la ora zece* the 10 o'clock meeting = *ședința care este la ora zece* the meeting that takes place at 10 o'clock, etc.

When the preposition *de* precedes the preposition *în*, they merge and form a new preposition: *din*. The preposition *din* from can form both circumstantial, and attributive constructions. When the prepositions *în* and *din* precede nouns in the singular that take the indefinite article, they change into *într-un* and *dintr-un* for the masculine and into *într-o* and *dintr-o* for the feminine.

To see how the mechanism presented above works, compare the examples:

în in

— *Voi locuiți în București sau în Cluj?* Do you live in Bucharest or in Cluj?

Eu stau într-un oraș mare. I live in a big city.

Ea stă într-o țară mică. She lives in a small country.

Păsărelele sunt în tufiș. The birdies are on the bush.

din from

Voi sunteți din București sau din Cluj? Are you from Bucharest or from Cluj?

Eu sunt dintr-un oraș mare. I'm from a big city.

Ea este dintr-o țară mică. She's from a small town.

Păsărelele din tufiș sunt foarte zgomotoase. The birdies on the bush are really noisy.

la at, in; by

Suntem la universitate. We are at the university.

Ei stau la țară. They live in the countryside.

Ea stă la fereastră. She stands by the window.

de la from, which is at

Ea e de la țară. She is from the countryside.

Fata de la geam este sora mea. The girl by the window is my sister.

pe on

Dicționarul este pe masă. The dictionary is on the table.

de pe on, which is on

Dicționarul de pe masă este nou. The dictionary on the table is new.

sub under

Pisica este sub masă. The cat is under the table.

de sub under, which is under

Pisica de sub masă este frumoasă. The cat under the table is beautiful.

după behind

Pisica este după ușă. The cat is behind the door.

de după behind, which is behind

Pisica de după ușă e mare. The cat behind the door is big.

lângă near to, next to

Casa mea se află lângă stația de autobuz. My house is next to the bus station.

de lângă near, next to, which is near, which is next to

Casa de lângă stația de autobuz este nouă. The house next to the bus station is mine.

la at

Avem curs la ora 10.00. We have a class at 10:00 am.

de la at, which is at

Cursul de la ora 10 e interesant. The ten o'clock class is interesting.

în timpul during

Meciul de baschet va fi în timpul cursului. The basketball game will take place during the class.

din timpul during, which happens during

Nu vom putea vedea meciul din timpul cursului. We will not be able to watch the game that will take place during the class.

Certain prepositions and prepositional phrases used in constructions indicating the place have adverbial correlatives. The preposition preceding a noun / pronoun formally behaves as if it had a definite article. These prepositions require the genitive case:

Nu te duce înainte. (adv.) Don't go ahead. — **Stai înaintea mamei.** (prep.) Stand ahead of mom.

Parchează în față. (adv.) Park in the front. — **Parchează în fața mașinii aceleia.** (prep.) Park in front of that car.

E ceva dedesubt. (adv.) There is something underneath. — **E ceva dedesubtul canapelei.** (prep.) There is something underneath the couch.

6.4. Polysemous prepositions

The most frequently used prepositions, especially the basic ones, are multifunctional or polysemous: they can be used to establish different relations within the sentence. For instance, the preposition **la** can indicate place (**stau la ușă** I'm standing by the door), time (**am venit la amiază** I came at noon), or manner (**gustări la minut** quick snacks). The preposition **din** can indicate place (**ea e din Franța** she is from France), time (**din zori** from dawn), or cause (**din dragoste** because of love), **cu** can indicate the instrument (**scriu cu creionul** I write with a pen), a feature (**fată cu păr blond** the blond hair girl) or different types of association (**pâine cu unt** bread and butter), **pe la** can indicate place – a short stop in a certain place (**am trecut pe la el** I stopped by his place), but it can also indicate time – the approximation of the hour (**vino pe la 5** come around 5), etc. Since in different languages prepositions develop secondary meanings differently, the prepositions can have a wide span of equivalence in other languages. Compare the examples with the Romanian equivalents of the English basic preposition 'by':

Prices rose by an average 10 % last year. – **Anul trecut prețurile au crescut în medie cu 10 %.**

They went to Sinaia by bus, not by train. – **Ne-am dus la Sinaia cu autocarul, nu cu trenul.**

He took me by the hand. – **M-a luat de mână.**

We met quite by chance. – **Ne-am întâlnit din întâmplare.**

I play by the rules. – **Eu joc conform regulilor.**

Spanish is taught by a very modern method here. – **Aici spaniola se predă după o metodă foarte modernă.**

You should have finished your dissertation by May 1st. – **Ar fi trebuit să-ți termini teza înainte de 1 mai.**

They were sitting over there by the window. – **Stăteau acolo, la fereastră / lângă fereastră.**

Students and professors do not address each other by their first name in Romania. – **În România studenții și profesorii nu își spun pe numele mic.**

She walked right by me. – **A trecut chiar pe lângă mine.**

We returned home by a different route. – **Am venit înapoi pe alt drum.**

I am going to start off by explaining the purpose of our project. – *Voi începe prin a explica scopul proiectului nostru.*

She was, by nature, a cheerful person. – *Prin natura sa, ea era o persoană veselă.*

We've been exchanging news by e-mail. – *Facem schimb de noutăți prin e-mail.*

7. CONJUNCTION

7.1. Basic features of the conjunctions

The conjunction is an invariable part of speech that functions as a grammatical tool, connecting two or more words in a simple sentence, or between two or more clauses in a complex sentence, and establishing relations of coordination or subordination:

Dan și Maria își petrec Crăciunul cu familia. Dan and Maria spend Christmas with their family. (coordination, simple sentence)

Ai mei stau acasă, iar eu mă duc la prietenii mei diseară. My folks will stay home tonight, and I'm going to see my friends. (coordination, complex sentence)

Trebuie să plec în România de Crăciun, pentru că mi-e dor de familie și de prieteni. I have to go to Romania for Christmas, because I miss friends and family. (subordination, complex sentence)

Mă duc la București chiar dacă va trebui să cheltuiesc un sac de bani. I'm going to Bucharest even though I will have to spend a fortune. (subordination, complex sentence)

Besides the simple conjunctions (*și* and, *iar* and, *dar* but, *să* to, *ci* but, *că* that, *sau* or, *ori* or, *căci* because, *deși* although, *dacă* if, *deoarece* because, *fiindcă* because, *încât* so that) and the compound ones (*ca să* to, in order to, *precum și* and, *dacă să* if to, *încât să* so that, in order to), Romanian also has phrases, groups of words, semantically and syntactically equivalent to a conjunction. The first element in such a phrase may be a noun with preposition (*în caz că*), a pronoun with preposition (*cu toate că* even if, even though), a preposition (*pentru ca să* in order to, *fără să* without), or an adverb (*chiar dacă* even if):

Chiar dacă ninge, tot ieșim la plimbare în dimineața zilei de Crăciun. We will go out for a walk even if it will be snowing on Christmas day in the morning.

Cu toate că a plouat, dimineața zilei de Paști a fost minunată. Although it rained, the Easter day morning was gorgeous.

7.2. Conjunctions of coordination

The conjunctions of coordination establish the relations of:

- addition: *și* and, *nici* neither, *și...și...both...and...*, *nici...nici...* neither...nor...
- opposition: *dar* but, *însă* but, *iar* and, *ci* but
- choice, alternative: *sau* or, *ori* or, *sau ... sau...* either...or..., *ori... ori...* either...or..., *fie... fie...* either...or...
- conclusion: *deci* so, *așadar* so, *prin urmare* accordingly, *în concluzie* in conclusion.

7.2.1. The conjunctions *și* and *iar*

The simple conjunctions *și* and *iar* can be difficult for an English speaker, since they both can be translated into English as 'and'.

Și equates and integrates two elements:

Dan și Maria petrec Crăciunul cu familia anul acesta. Dan and Maria are spending Christmas with their family this year.

Dan împodobește pomul și Maria îl ajută. Dan is decorating the tree, and Maria is helping him.

Iar integrates and contrasts two elements simultaneously:

Dan și Maria petrec Crăciunul în România, iar eu stau în Franța. Dan and Maria will spend Christmas in Romania, and I will stay in France.

Dan împodobește pomul, iar Maria gătește. Dan is decorating the tree, and Maria is cooking.

In normal usage, there is a tendency to use *iar* instead of *și* when adding two actions (sentences), even if the contrast is not very strong - in other words, there is a tendency for *iar* to accept copulative meaning:

Dan împodobeste bradul și Maria îl ajută.* = *Dan împodobeste bradul, iar Maria îl ajută. Dan is decorating the tree, and Maria is helping him.

Note that *și* is not only a conjunction in Romanian, but also an adverb of reinforcement or addition (English: 'too', 'also'):

Prietenii mei se duc în România de Crăciun și eu m-am hotărât să merg cu ei. My friends are going to Romania for Christmas, and I decided to join them. (conjunction)

Prietenii mei se duc în România de Crăciun. Mă duc și eu cu ei! My friends are going to Romania for Christmas. I'm going to join them, too ! (adverb)

7.2.2. The conjunctions *dar* / *însă* and *ci*

The simple conjunctions *dar* / *însă* and *ci* can also be challenging, since they both are translated into English as 'but', although they differ significantly in Romanian.

Dar / *însă* contrasts two entirely independent elements:

Eu îmi petrec Crăciunul în Carolina de Nord, dar / însă aș fi vrut să mă duc în România. I will spend Christmas in North carolina, but I would have liked to go to Romania.

Ci is used to underline opposition (the reference word is preceded by the negation *nu* or the verb in the first clause is in the negative):

Vin nu mâine, ci poimâine. I'm not coming tomorrow, but the day after tomorrow.

Eu nu-mi petrec Crăciunul în România, ci mă duc în Franța. I will not spend Christmas in Romania, but I will go to France.

7.2.3. Correlative conjunctions of coordination

There are pairs of conjunctions of coordination, showing :

addition: *și ... , și ...* both ..., and ...

equal choice: *sau / ori ... , sau / ori ...* either ..., or...

elimination: *nici ... , nici ...* neither ..., nor ...

In structures with *nici ... , nici ...* neither ..., nor ..., the verbs will be in the negative, according to the rule of double negation :

și ... , și ... both ..., and ...

— ***Bei bere sau vin?*** Would you like beer or wine?

— ***Și bere, și vin!*** Both beer, and wine!

sau / ori ... , sau / ori ... either ..., or...

— ***Bei bere sau vin?*** Would you like beer or wine?

— ***Sau / ori bere, sau / ori vin!*** Either beer, or wine.

— ***Te duci la școală azi sau stai acasă ?*** Are you going to school today, or are you staying home?

— ***Sau / ori mă duc la școală, sau / ori stau acasă!*** I will either go to school, or stay home.

nici ... , nici ... neither ..., nor ...

— *Bei bere sau vin?* Would you like beer or wine?

— *Nici bere, nici vin!* Neither beer, nor wine.

— *Te duci la școală azi sau stai acasă?* Are you going to school today, or are you staying home?

— *Nici nu mă duc la școală, nici nu stau acasă!* I will not go to school, nor will I stay home.

7.3. Conjunctions of subordination

Conjunctions of subordination function as connectors between the main clause and the secondary clauses in complex sentences. They indicate attributive and circumstantial relations within the complex sentence.

7.3.1. Conjunctions of subordination used as grammatical markers

The conjunctions of subordination can cover a non-specific semantic area and function as markers for certain constructions. For example, the conjunction *că* that comes after verbs of thought and speech: *cred că* I think that, *știu că* I know that, *a spus că* he said that, etc.. The conjunction *să* is a morphological marker of the subjunctive mood, and comes after all the structures requiring the subjunctive, connecting also the main clause and the secondary one: *vreau să lucrez* I want to work, *trebuie să lucrez* I need to work; etc.). If in a subordinate clause with a subjunctive verb one of the elements is pointed out for emphasis, the conjunction *ca...să* is used, and the element to be pointed out is embedded in the complex conjunction:

Vreau să te simți bine de sărbători. → *Vreau ca tu să te simți bine de sărbători.* I want that you enjoy holidays.

Ar fi bine să vii mâine la test. It would be good for you to come to the exam tomorrow. → *Ar fi bine ca mâine la test să nu lipsești.* It would be good for you not to miss the exam tomorrow.

Mi-ar plăcea să mă ajuți atunci când am nevoie. I would like you to help me when I need you. → *Mi-ar plăcea ca, atunci când am nevoie, să mă ajuți.* I would like to get your help when I need it.

The same mechanism is valid for the compound conjunctions *fără să – fără ca să* without, *înainte să – înainte ca să* before:

A venit fără să ne fi spus că vine. → *A venit fără ca nouă să ne fi spus că vine.* He came without telling us that he would come.

Întinde-i o mână de ajutor înainte să ți-o ceară. → *Întinde-i o mână de ajutor înainte ca el să ți-o ceară.* Lend him a helping hand before he asks for it.

7.3.2. Semantically specialized conjunctions of subordination

There are also conjunctions of subordination semantically specialized to show:

- cause: *fiindcă* because, *pentru că* because, *deoarece* because, *căci* because, *din cauză că* because, *din pricină că* because, *pe motiv că* due to, *sub pretext că* under the pretext that, *întrucât* because, *dat fiind că* given that, *având în vedere că* taking into account that, provided that, *de vreme ce* since, *din moment ce* since, *odată ce* since
- consequence: *încât* so that, *de* so that
- concession: *deși* although, *chiar dacă* even if, *chiar de* even if, *chiar să*, *cu toate că* despite, *în ciuda faptului că* despite
- condition: *dacă* if, *de* if, *cu condiția să*, *cu condiția ca* provided that, *în caz că* in case that, *în ipoteza că* assuming that, *în ideea că* on the assumption that
- purpose: *să* to, *ca să* in order to, *pentru ca să* in order to
- time: *în timp ce* while, *în vreme ce* while, *până ce* until, *până când* until, *până să* before, *după ce* after, *imediat ce* as soon as, *îndată ce* as soon as, *de cum* as soon as, *înainte să* before, no sooner, *ori de câte ori* anytime, *odată ce* once
- manner of action: *ca și cum* as if, *ca și când* as if, *fără să* without, *pe măsură ce* while
- relation: *relativ la faptul că* related to, *cu privire la faptul că* regarding, with respect to the fact that

- exception: *în afară de faptul că* besides, except for, *în afara faptului că* besides, except for
- opposition: *în timp ce* while, *pe când* while, *în loc să* instead
- addition: *pe lângă faptul că* besides, *după ce că* besides

7.3.3. Correlative conjunctions of subordination

There are correlative conjunctions of subordination, that function in pairs:

cum ... cum: *Cum deschide gura, cum zice o răutate.* As soon as he / she opens his / her mouth, he / she say something mean.
(relation of temporality)

de aceea ... pentru că: *De aceea nu tace deloc, pentru că îi place pur și simplu să vorbească.* That's why he / she doesn't refrain from talking, because he / she just likes talking. (relation of causality)

atât(a) ... încât: *A plâns atâta, încât acuma nu mai poate plânge.* She cried so much, that now she cannot cry anymore.
(consequence)

atât(a) ... cât: *Mănâncă numai atât cât îți trebuie.* Eat only as much as you need. (manner, quantity)

pe cât ... pe atât: *Acest obiect pe cât e de simplu, pe atât e de sofisticat.* This object is as sophisticated, as it is simple.
(manner)

așa ... cum: *Așa să faci, cum ți-a spus ea!* Do it like that, the way she told you to. (manner)

cum ... așa: *Cum te porți tu cu oamenii, așa se comportă și ei cu tine.* The way you treat other people, so will they treat you. (manner)

deși ... totuși: *Deși a fost foarte multă lume la petrecere, totuși m-am simțit bine.* Even though there was many people there, I still enjoyed the party. (concession)

8. INTERJECTION

8.1. Basic features of the interjections

The interjection is used to suggest or to express physical sensations (pain, cold, etc.), states and impressions (pleasure / displeasure, satisfaction / dissatisfaction, etc.), or to reproduce noises, sounds, and also the sounds made by animals (onomatopoeia). There are simple interjections (*ah!*, *au!*, *ași!*, *ura!*, *ei!*, *vai!*, *hei!*, *na!*, *zău?*), compound interjections and set phrases (*ei, na!*, *haida-de!*, *nu zău!*, *pe naiba!*, *la dracu!*, *da de unde?!*).

8.2. Reactive interjections

Below are some of the most frequent interjections used in Romanian, that express a reaction to events or emotions:

- physical pain: *a!*, *au!*, *aoleo!*, *vai!*, *vai-vai!*, *vai de mine!*
- cold: *brrr!*
- pleasure related to good taste, smell: *mmm!*
- displeasure related to bad taste, smell: *câh!*
- effort: *hop!*, *hopa!*, *hei-rup!*
- joy, enthusiasm: *a!*, *o!*, *ura!*, *bravo!*, *super!*
- dissatisfaction: *ț!*, *pfu!*
- emotional pain, dismay: *oh!*, *of!*, *vai!*, *aoleo!*
- regret, nostalgia: *of!*, *ehe-e!*
- doubt, distrust: *hm!*, *haide-haide!*, *da-da!*, *zău?*
- fear: *aoleo!*, *hait!*
- surprise: *o!*, *hopa!*, *ia te uită!*, *nu zău!*, *uf!*, *hm!*, *aha!*, *ah!*
- unpleasant surprise: *hopa!*, *hm!*, *na-ți-o!*, *drace!*, *la dracu!*
- agreement: *îhî!*
- disagreement: *nț!*, *ne-ne!*, *da de unde?!* Another interjection is often used to express disagreement but lacks a standard written form, which is related to the fact that written Romanian is very reluctant to reflect many oral, colloquial forms: the interjection is a nasal sound close to [î], repeated twice, something like *î-î* or *îm-îm*.

It should be noted that under the influence of the massive import of American pop culture, especially through television, some very frequent American English interjections, such as *wow!*, *oops!*, *cool!* are often used in contemporary Romanian, especially by young people.

8.3. Communicative interjections

Interjections are also used to get the attention of a person, to make / help somebody to perform an action, to encourage people, or to call animals:

- for getting people's attention: *hei!*, *mă!*, *măi!*, *bă!*, *băi!*, *fă!* (only for women, frequent in rural areas, impolite in urban areas), *pst!*
- for giving a call to action: *hai!*, *haide!*, *dă-i drumu!*, *marș!* (when chasing away), *valea!* (when chasing away)
- for encouraging people: *hai!*, *haide!*
- for making people be quiet or shut up: *ssst!*, *șșș!*
- for calling animals: *cuțu-cuțu!* (a dog), *pis-pis!* (a cat), *pui-pui-pui!* (chicken)
- chasing animals away: *marș!* (a dog), *zât!* (a cat), *hăș!*, *huș!* (chicken)

8.4. Imitative interjections

The most frequent interjections that imitate noises and sounds are listed under the following three categories:

Noises and sounds in nature	
<i>pac!</i>	a hit, a shot
<i>poc!</i>	a hit, when something blows up
<i>buf!</i>	the fall of a large and heavy object
<i>bum!</i>	an explosion, a cannon-shot
<i>trosc!</i>	wood breaking, a slap
<i>pleosc!</i>	a slap, something falling into water
<i>pic!</i>	water dropping, dripping
<i>fâss!</i>	the sound of gas escaping
<i>bâldâbâc!</i>	a dipping, diving, sinking
<i>zvârr!</i>	a throw
<i>vâj!</i>	the wind blowing
Sounds produced by instruments and machinery	
<i>tic-tac!</i>	the clock
<i>țârr!</i>	the alarm clock, the door bell
<i>bum-bum!</i>	a drum
<i>ta-ra-ra</i>	a trumpet
Sounds made by people and animals	
<i>ha-ha! he-he! hoho!</i>	laughing
<i>hi-hi!</i>	giggling
<i>hapciu!</i>	sneezing
<i>ham-ham</i>	a barking dog
<i>mâr</i>	a growling dog
<i>miau</i>	a meowing cat
<i>mrrrr</i>	a purring cat
<i>muu</i>	a cow
<i>groh-groh, guiț-guiț</i>	a pig
<i>b-e-e</i>	a sheep
<i>m-e-e</i>	a goat
<i>cotcodac</i>	a hen
<i>cucurigu</i>	a rooster
<i>piu-piu</i>	a chicken
<i>mor-mor</i>	a bear
<i>cu-cu</i>	a cuckoo

Bibliography

- Augerot, J. E. 2000. *Romanian / Limba Română. A Course in Modern Romanian*. Iași, Oxford, Portland: The Center for Romanian Studies.
- Avram, M. 2000. *Gramatica pentru toți*, ed. a III-a. București: Humanitas.
- Bălănescu, O. 1998. *Limba română pentru străini (studenți, diplomați, oameni de afaceri)*. București: Fiat Lux.
- Brâncuș, G., Ionescu, A., Saramandu, M. 2001. *Limba română. Manual pentru studenții străini*, ed. a IV-a. București: Editura Univeristății București.
- Daniliuc, L., Daniliuc, R. 2000. *Descriptive Romanian grammar. An Outline*. Muenchen: LINCOM EUROPA.
- Doca, Gh. 1999. *Romanian Language. Vol. I. Essential Structures*. București: Ars Docendi.
- Doca, Gh. 2000. *Romanian Language. Vol. II. Morpho-Syntactic and Lexical Structures*. București: Ars Docendi.
- Doca, Gh., Rocchetti, A. 1998. *Comprendre et pratiquer le roumain*. București: Teora.
- Dorobăț, A., Fotea, M. 1999. *Limba română de bază. Manual pentru studenții străini*. Iași: Institutul European.
- Pop, L., Moldovan, V. (ed.). 1997. *Grammaire du roumain / Romanian Grammar / Gramatica limbii române*. Cluj : Echinox.
- *** 1966 *Gramatica limbii române*. București: Editura Academiei Republicii Socialiste România.